the official Journal of the fibonacci association


## CONTENTS

On $m$-th Order Linear Recurrences Claude Levesque ..... 290
Gegenbauer Polynomials Revisited A.F. Horadam ..... 294
Fibonacci and Lucas Numbers of the Form $3 z^{2} \pm 1$ Jannis A. Antoniadis ..... 300
Generalized Wythoff Numbers from SimultaneousFibonacci Representations .............. . Marjorie Bicknell-Johnson308
Inverse Trigonometrical Summation Formulas Involving
Pell Polynomials ................ Bro. J.M. Mahon \& A.F. Horadam ..... 319
A Two-Dimensional Generalization of Grundy's Game Georg Schrage ..... 325
Lucas Sequences in Subgraph Counts of Series-Parallel
and Related Graphs Eric M. Neufeld \& Charles J. Colbourn ..... 330
Longest Success Runs and Fibonacci-Type
Polynomials Andreas N. Philippou \& Frosso S. Makri ..... 338
Announcement ..... 346
On Bernstein's Combinatorial
Identities ................. Marie-Louis Lavertu \& Claude Levesque ..... 347
Multiple Occurrences of Binomial Coefficients Craig A. Tovey ..... 356
Linear Recurrence Relations with Binomial Coefficients Michael Frenklach ..... 359
The Series of Prime Square Reciprocals Hans Herda ..... 364
Combinatorial Proof for a Sorting Problem Identity C.A. Church, Jr. ..... 366
A Fibonacci and Lucas
Tannenbaum Arthur Barry \& Stanley Bezuszka, S.J. ..... 369
Elementary Problems and Solutions..... Edited by A.P. Hillman, Gloria C. Padilla, \& Charles R. Wall371
Advanced Problems and Solutions .. Edited by Raymond E. Whitney ..... 376
Volume Index ..... 383

## PURPOSE

The primary function of THE FIBONACCI QUARTERLY is to serve as a focal point for widespread interest in the Fibonacci and related numbers, especially with respect to new results, research proposals, challenging problems, and innovative proofs of old ideas.

## EDITORIAL POLICY

THE FIBONACCI QUARTERLY seeks articles that are intelligible yet stimulating to its readers, most of whom are university teachers and students. These articles should be lively and well motivated, with new ideas that develop enthusiasm for number sequences or the exploration of number facts. Illustrations and tables should be wisely used to clarify the ideas of the manuscript. Unanswered questions are encouraged, and a complete list of references is absolutely necessary.

## SUBMITTING AN ARTICLE

Articles should be submitted in the format of the current issues of the THE FIBONACCI QUARTERLY. They should be typewritten or reproduced typewritten copies, that are clearly readable, double spaced with wide margins and on only one side of the paper. The full name and address of the author must appear at the beginning of the paper directly under the title. Illustrations should be carefully drawn in India ink on separate sheets of bond paper or vellum, approximately twice the size they are to appear in print.

Two copies of the manuscript should be submitted to: GERALD E. BERGUM, EDITOR, THE FIBONACCI QUARTERLY, DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS, SOUTH DAKOTA STATE UNIVERSITY, BOX 2220, BROOKINGS, SD 57007-1297.

Authors are encouraged to keep a copy of their manuscripts for their own files as protection against loss. The editor will give immediate acknowledgment of all manuscripts received.

## SUBSCRIPTIONS, ADDRESS CHANGE, AND REPRINT INFORMATION

Address all subscription correspondence, including notification of address change, to: RICHARD VINE, SUBSCRIPTION MANAGER, THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION, UNIVERSITY OF SANTA CLARA, SANTA CLARA, CA 95053.
Requests for reprint permission should be directed to the editor. However, general permission is granted to members of The Fibonacci Association for noncommercial reproduction of a limited quantity of individual articles (in whole or in part) provided complete references is made to the source.

Annual domestic Fibonacci Association membership dues, which include a subscription to THE FIBONACCI QUARTERLY, are $\$ 25$ for Regular Membership, $\$ 35$ for Sustaining Membership, and $\$ 65$ for Institutional Membership; foreign rates, which are based on international mailing rates, are somewhat higher than domestic rates; please write for details. THE FIBONACCI QUARTERLY is published each February, May, August and November.

All back issues of THE FIBONACCI QUARTERLY are available in microfilm or hard copy format from UNIVERSITY MICROFILMS INTERNATIONAL, 300 NORTH ZEEB ROAD, DEPT. P.R., ANN ARBOR, MI 48106. Reprints can also be purchased from UMI CLEARING HOUSE at the same address.

1984 by
© The Fibonacci Association
All rights reserved, including rights to this journal issue as a whole and, except where otherwise noted, rights to each individual contribution.

# דூie Fibonacci Quarterly 

Founded in 1963 by Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. (1921-1980)

Br. Alfred Brousseau, and I.D. Ruggles

THE OFFICIAL JOURNAL OF THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION
DEVOTED TO THE STUDY
OF INTEGERS WITH SPECIAL PROPERTIES

## EDITOR

GERALD E. BERGUM, South Dakota State University, Brookings, SD 57007

ASSISTANT EDITORS<br>MAXEY BROOKE, Sweeny, TX 77480<br>PAUL F. BYRD, San Jose State University, San Jose, CA 95192<br>LEONARD CARLITZ, Duke University, Durham, NC 27706<br>HENRY W. GOULD, West Virginia University, Morgantown, WV 26506<br>A.P. HILLMAN, University of New Mexico, Albuquerque, NM 87131<br>A.F. HORADAM, University of New England, Armidale, N.S.W. 2351, Australia<br>DAVID A. KLARNER, University of Nebraska, Lincoln, NE 68588<br>JOHN RABUNG, Randolph-Macon College, Ashland, VA 23005<br>DONALD W. ROBINSON, Brigham Young University, Provo. UT 84602<br>M.N.S. SWAMY, Concordia University, Montreal H3C 1M8, Quebec, Canada<br>D.E. THORO, San Jose State University, San Jose, CA 95192<br>THERESA VAUGHAN, University of North Carolina, Greensboro, NC 27412<br>CHARLES R. WALL, Trident Technical College, Charleston, SC 29411<br>WILLIAM WEBB, Washington State University, Pullman, WA 99163

## BOARD OF DIRECTORS OF THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION

CALVIN LONG (President)
Washington State University, Pullman, WA 99163
G.L. ALEXANDERSON

University of Santa Clara, Santa Clara, CA 95053
HUGH EDGAR (Vice-President)
San Jose State University, San Jose, CA 95192
MARJORIE JOHNSON (Secretary-Treasurer)
Santa Clara Unified School District, Santa Clara, CA 95051
LEONARD KLOSINSKI
University of Santa Clara, Santa Clara, CA 95053
JEFF LAGARIAS
Bell Laboratories, Murray Hill, NJ 07974

# ON m-TH ORDER LINEAR RECURRENCES 

CLAUDE LEVESQUE
Université Laval, Québec, P. Québec, Canada, G1K 7P4
(Submitted April 1983)

1. INTRODUCTION

Fix numbers $u_{0}, u_{1}, \ldots, u_{-1}$, and for every $n \geqslant 0$, define $u_{m+n}$ by means of the $m$ preceding terms with the rule

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{m+n}-k_{1} u_{m+n-1}-\cdots-k_{m} u_{n}=0, \text { with } k_{m} \neq 0 \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this note, we wish to present two formulas for these numbers $u_{n}$ satisfying the above $m$-th order linear recurrence (Sections 2 and 3).

These results are probably known to some readers; however, since from time to time we happen to see in the literature special cases of these formulas, it may be worthwhile to present them once and for all.

Note that for $m=2, k_{1}=k_{2}=1, u_{0}=u_{1}=1$, one is dealing with the Fibonacci numbers, which have been extensively studied by many authors (see, for instance, [13], [5], and [3]), and which were used by Matijasevič [9] in his notorious proof that Hilbert's tenth problem is recursively unsolvable.

## 2. GENERATING FUNCTION AND BINET'S FORMULA

Using the $m$-th order linear recurrence

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{m+n}=k_{1} u_{m+n-1}+k_{2} u_{m+n-2}+\cdots+k_{m} u_{n}, k_{m} \neq 0, \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

(with the $k_{i}$ 's in $\mathbb{Z}$ for instance, or in a given field), we easily obtain

$$
\left(\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_{n} X^{n}\right)\left(1-k_{1} X-\cdots-k_{m} X^{m}\right)=\sum_{i=0}^{m-1} v_{i} X^{i}
$$

where the $v_{i}$ 's, functions of the initial conditions on $u_{0}, u_{1}, \ldots, u_{m-1}$, are defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{i}=-\sum_{j=0}^{i} u_{i-j} k_{j}, \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

(with $k_{0}=-1$ throughout this article). Associated with that recursive sequence is the following polynomial,

$$
f(X)=X^{m}=k_{1} X^{m-1}-\cdots-k_{m-1} X-k_{m}=\left(X-\alpha_{1}\right)\left(X-\alpha_{2}\right) \cdots\left(X-\alpha_{m}\right),
$$

whose roots we assume distinct (and nonzero, since $k_{m} \neq 0$ ).
Then we have

$$
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_{n} X^{n}=\frac{v_{0}+v_{1} X+\cdots+v_{m-1} X^{m-1}}{1-k_{1} X-k_{2} X^{2}-\cdots-k_{m} X^{m}}
$$

## ON m-TH ORDER LINEAR RECURRENCES

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =\frac{v_{0}+v_{1} X+\cdots+v_{m-1} X^{m-1}}{\left(1-\alpha_{1} X\right)\left(1-\alpha_{2} X\right) \cdot \cdots \cdot\left(1-\alpha_{m} X\right)} \\
& =\left(v_{0}+v_{1} X+\cdots+v_{m-1} X^{m-1}\right)\left(1+p_{1} X+\cdots+p_{j} X^{j}+\cdots\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $p_{j}$ stands for the sum of all symmetric functions of weight $j$ in $\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}$, $\ldots, \alpha_{m}$; in other words [2], $p_{j}$ is the "sum of the homogeneous products of $j$ dimensions" of the $m$ symbols $\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{m}$.

Let us recall from Volume 1 of [2, p. 178] that

$$
p_{j}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\alpha_{i}^{m-1+j}}{f^{\prime}\left(\alpha_{i}\right)} \text { with } p_{0}=1
$$

and that $p_{-1}=p_{-2}=\cdots=p_{-m+1}=0$ (which follows from Example 4 of $p$. 172). We therefore obtain for the $m-t h$ number $u_{n}$ what can be called

$$
\text { BINET'S FORMULA: } u_{n}=\sum_{j=0}^{m-1} v_{j} p_{n-j} \text {. }
$$

EXAMPLES: (1) Let $v_{0}=v_{1}=\cdots=v_{m-2}=0, v_{m-1}=1$; then, as in Formula 9 of [7],

$$
u_{n}=p_{n-m+1}=\frac{\alpha_{1}^{n}}{f^{\prime}\left(\alpha_{1}\right)}+\frac{\alpha_{2}^{n}}{f^{\prime}\left(\alpha_{2}\right)}+\cdots+\frac{\alpha_{m}^{n}}{f^{\prime}\left(\alpha_{m}\right)} .
$$

(2) For $m=2, m=3$, we recover Binet's formulas of [3] and [11].
(3) For $n \in \mathbb{N}=\{0,1,2, \ldots\}$, define $s_{n}$ by

$$
s_{n}=\alpha_{1}^{n}+\alpha_{2}^{n}+\cdots+\alpha_{m}^{n}
$$

As is well known (see [2]), Newton's formulas state that:

$$
s_{n}= \begin{cases}m & \text { if } n=0 \\ k_{1} \quad \text { if } n=1 \\ k_{1} s_{n-1}+k_{2} s_{n-2}+\cdots+k_{n-1} s_{1}+n k_{n} & \text { if } 2 \leqslant n \leqslant m-1 \\ k_{1} s_{n-1}+k_{2} s_{n-2}+\cdots+k_{m} s_{n-m} & \text { if } n \geqslant m\end{cases}
$$

In particular, if $u_{n}=s_{n}$, then $\left\{u_{n}\right\}$ satisfies (2.1).
Thus, using the fact that $k_{0}=-1$, we find that (2.2) gives:

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
v_{0} & =m=-m k_{0} \\
v_{1} & =s_{1}-m k_{1}=-(m-1) k_{1} \\
v_{2} & =s_{2}-s_{1} k_{1}-m k_{2}=-(m-2) k_{2} \\
& \vdots \\
v_{m-1} & =s_{m-1}-s_{m-2} k_{1}-s_{m-3} k_{2}-\cdots-s_{1} k_{m-2}-m k_{m-1}=-1 k_{m-1}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

In short, for $j=0,1, \ldots, m-1, v_{j}=-(m-j) k_{j}$, and Binet's formula becomes

$$
s_{n}=-\sum_{j=0}^{m-1}(m-j) k_{j} p_{n-j}
$$

## 3. ANOTHER FORMULA

We can also use the multinomial theorem to obtain a formula for $u_{n}$ that is a function of (i.e., the elementary symmetric functions of) $k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{m}$. Here we no longer require that the roots of $f$ be distinct. Within a certain radius of convergence, we find that
where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_{n} X^{n} & =\frac{v_{0}+v_{1} X+\cdots+v_{m-1} X^{m-1}}{1-\left(k_{1} X+k_{2} X^{2}+\cdots+k_{m} X^{m}\right)} \\
& =\left(v_{0}+v_{1} X+\cdots+v_{m-1} X^{m-1}\right)\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}\left(k_{1} X+\cdots+k_{m-1} X^{m-1}+k_{m} X^{m}\right)^{j}\right] \\
& =\left(v_{0}+v_{1} X+\cdots+v_{m-1} X^{m-1}\right)\left(\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} A(i) X^{i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
A(i)=\sum \frac{\left(t_{1}+t_{2}+\cdots+t_{m}\right)!}{t_{1}!t_{2}!\cdots t_{m}!} k_{1}^{t_{1}} k_{2}^{t_{2}} \ldots k_{m}^{t_{m}}
$$

the last sum being taken over all m-tuples ( $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}$ ) of $\mathbb{N}^{m}$ such that

$$
t_{1}+2 t_{2}+\cdots+m t_{m}=i
$$

Defining $A(i)$ to be 0 for $i<0$, we therefore conclude:

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{n}=\sum_{j=0}^{m-1} v_{j} A(n-j) \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

EXAMPLES: (1) If $v_{0}=1, v_{1}=v_{2}=\cdots=v_{m-1}=0$, then

$$
u_{n}=A(n) .
$$

(2) Let $s_{n}=\alpha_{1}^{n}+\alpha_{2}^{n}+\cdots+\alpha_{m}^{n}$. Replacing $v_{j}$ by $-(m-j) k_{j}$, and making in the $j$-th summation ( $j=1, \ldots, m-1$ ) of (3.1) the change of variable $t_{j} \rightarrow t_{j}-1$, we obtain after a few calculations what is called in [2] Waring's formula for $s_{n}$ :

$$
s_{n}=\sum_{t_{1}+2 t_{2}+\cdots+m t_{m}=n} \frac{n\left(t_{1}+t_{2}+\cdots+t_{m}-1\right)!}{t_{1}!t_{2}!\cdots t_{m}!} k_{1}^{t_{1}} k_{2}^{t_{2}} \ldots k_{m}^{t_{m}}
$$

## REFERENCES

1. A. C. Aitken. Determinants and Matrices. 9th ed. New York: Interscience, 1956.
2. W. S. Burnside. The Theory of Equations. 7th ed. 2 vols. New York: Dover Publications.
3. G. Frei. "Binary Lucas and Fibonacci Polynomials, I." Math. Nachr. 96 (1980):83-112.
4. S. Goldberg. Introduction to Difference Equations. 3rd ed. New York: John Wiley \& Sons, 1966.
5. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr. Fibonacci and Lucas Numbers. Santa Clara, Calif: The Fibonacci Association, 1973.
```
ON m-TH ORDER LINEAR RECURRENCES
```

6. Dov Jarden. Recurring Sequences. 3rd ed. Israel: Riveon Lematematika, 1973. Chapter 29.
7. D. Kalman. "Generalized Fibonacci Numbers by Matrix Methods." The Fibonacci Quarterly 20, no. 1 (1982):73-76.
8. D. Kalman. "The Generalized Vandermonde Matrix." Math. Magazine 57, no. 1 (1984):15-21.
9. Y. Matijasevič. "Enumerable Sets Are Diophantine." Soviet Math. Doklady 11 (1970):354-358.
10. K. S. Miller. Linear Difference Equations. New York: W. A. Benjamin, Inc., 1968.
11. W. R. Spickerman. "Binet's formula for the Tribonacci Sequence." The Fibonacci Quarterly 20, no. 2 (1982):118-120.
12. M. R. Spiege1. Finite Differences and Difference Equations. Schaum's Outline Series. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1971.
13. N. Vorob'ev. The Fibonacci Numbers. Boston: Heath, 1963.

# gEGENBAUER POLYNOMIALS REVISITED 

A. F. HORADAM<br>University of New England, Armidale, Australia

(Submitted June 1983)

1. INTRODUCTION

The Gegenbauer (or ultraspherical) polynomials $C_{n}^{\lambda}(x)\left(\lambda>-\frac{1}{2},|x| \leqslant 1\right)$ are defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{0}^{\lambda}(x)=1, \quad C_{1}^{\lambda}(x)=2 \lambda x \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the recurrence relation

$$
n C_{n}^{\lambda}(x)=2 x(\lambda+n-1) C_{n-1}^{\lambda}(x)-(2 \lambda+n-2) C_{n-2}^{\lambda}(x) \quad(n \geqslant 2) . \quad \text { (1.2) }
$$

Gegenbauer polynomials are related to $T_{n}(x)$, the Chebyshev polynomials of the first kind, and to $U_{n}(x)$, the Chebyshev polynomials of the second kind, by the relations

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{n}(x)=\frac{n}{2} \operatorname{iim}_{\lambda \rightarrow 0}\left(\frac{C_{n}^{\lambda}(x)}{\lambda}\right) \quad(n \geqslant 1), \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{n}(x)=C_{n}^{1}(x) . \tag{1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Properties of the rising and descending diagonals of the Pascal-type arrays of $\left\{T_{n}(x)\right\}$ and $\left\{U_{n}(x)\right\}$ were investigated in [2], [3], and [5], while in [4] the rising diagonals of the similar array for $C_{n}^{\lambda}(x)$ were examined.

Here, we consider the descending diagonals in the Pascal-type array for $\left\{C_{n}^{\lambda}(x)\right\}$, with a backward glance at some of the material in [4].

As it turns out, the descending diagonal polynomials have less complicated computational aspects than the polynomials generated by the rising diagonals.

Brief mention will also be made of the generalized Humbert polynomial, of which the Gegenbauer polynomials and, consequently, the Chebyshev polynomials, are special cases.

## 2. DESCENDING DIAGONALS FOR THE GEGENBAUER POLYNOMIAL ARRAY

Table 1 sets out the first few Gegenbauer polynomials (with $y=2 x$ ):

TABLE 1. Descending Diagonals for Gegenbauer Polynomials
wherein we have written

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\lambda)_{n}=\lambda(\lambda+1)(\lambda+2) \cdots(\lambda+n-1) . \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Polynomials (2.1) may be obtained either from the generating recurrence (1.2) together with the initial values (1.1), or directly from the known explicit summation representation

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{n}^{\lambda}(x)=\sum_{m=0}^{[n / 2]} \frac{(-1)^{m}(\lambda)_{n-m}(2 x)^{n-2 m}}{m!(n-2 m)!}, \lambda \text { an integer and } n \geqslant 2, \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, as usual, $[n / 2]$ symbolizes the integer part of $n / 2$.
The generating function for the Gegenbauer polynomials is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} C_{n}^{\lambda}(x) t^{n}=\left(1-2 x t+t^{2}\right)^{-\lambda} \quad(|t|<1) \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Designate the descending diagonals in Table 1 , indicated by lines, by the symbols $d_{j}^{\lambda}(x) \quad(j=0,1,2, \ldots)$.

Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& d_{0}^{\lambda}(x)=1, \quad d_{1}^{\lambda}(x)=\lambda(2 x-1), \quad d_{2}^{\lambda}(x)=\frac{(\lambda)_{2}(2 x-1)^{2}}{2!} \\
& d_{3}^{\lambda}(x)=\frac{(\lambda)_{3}(2 x-1)^{3}}{3!}, \quad d_{4}^{\lambda}(x)=\frac{(\lambda)_{4}(2 x-1)^{4}}{4!}, \ldots \ldots \tag{2.5}
\end{align*}
$$

From the emerging pattern in (2.5), one can confidently expect that

$$
\begin{equation*}
d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)=\frac{(\lambda)_{n}(2 x-1)^{n}}{n!}=\binom{\lambda+n-1}{n}(2 x-1)^{n}, \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

a result which we now proceed to prove.
Proof of (2.6): Suppose we represent the pairs of values of $m$ and $n$ which give rise to $d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)$ by the couplet ( $m, n$ ).

Then, at successive "levels" of the descending diagonal $d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)$ in Table 1 , we have the couplets

$$
(0, n),(1, n+1),(2, n+2), \ldots,(n-1,2 n-1),(n, 2 n),
$$

so that corresponding values of $n-2 m$ are $n, n-1, n-2, \ldots, 1,0$, while $n-m$ always has the value $n$. [It is important to note that the maximum value for $m$ in the couplets must be $n$.]

Consequently, from Table 1 and (2.3), with $y=2 x$ for convenience, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
d_{n}^{\lambda}(x) & =\frac{(\lambda)_{n} y^{n}}{0!n!}-\frac{(\lambda)_{n} y^{n-1}}{1!(n-1)!}+\frac{(\lambda)_{n} y^{n-2}}{2!(n-2)!}-\cdots+(-1)^{n} \frac{(\lambda)_{n} y^{0}}{n!0!} \\
& =\frac{(\lambda)_{n}}{n!}\left\{\binom{n}{0} y^{n}-\binom{n}{1} y^{n-1}+\binom{n}{2} y^{n-2}-\cdots+(-1)^{n}\binom{n}{n} y^{0}\right\} \\
& =\frac{(\lambda)_{n}}{n!}(y-1)^{n}=\frac{(\lambda)_{n}}{n!}(2 x-1)^{n}=\binom{\lambda+n-1}{n}(2 x-1)^{n} .
\end{aligned}
$$

From (2.6) it follows immediately that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)}{d_{n-1}^{\lambda}(x)}=\frac{\lambda+n-1}{n}(2 x-1), \quad n \geqslant 1 \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover,

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2 x-1) \frac{d}{d x}\left(d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)-2 n d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)=0, \quad n \geqslant 0\right. \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

readily follows.
Putting

$$
\begin{equation*}
g \equiv d(\lambda, x, t)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} d_{n}^{\lambda}(x) t^{n} \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

we find that the generating function for $\left\{d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)\right\}$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
g=\left[1-(2 x-1)^{t}\right]^{-\lambda} \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 t \frac{\partial g}{\partial t}-(2 x-1) \log (2 x-1) \frac{\partial g}{\partial x}=0 \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is independent of $\lambda$.
Additionally, we easily establish that

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \lambda^{2} t(2 x-1)^{t-1} \frac{\partial g}{\partial x}-g^{-\lambda^{-1}} \log g \frac{\partial g}{\partial x}=0 \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda^{2}(2 x-1)^{t} \log (2 x-1) \frac{\partial g}{\partial \lambda}-g^{-\lambda^{-1}} \log g \frac{\partial g}{\partial t}=0 \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

if we allow $\lambda$ to vary.
Differentiating (2.8) w.r.t. $x$ and substituting from (2.8), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2 x-1)^{2} \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}}\left(d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)-2^{2} n(n-1) d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)=0\right. \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Continued repetition of this process, with substitution from the previous steps, ultimately yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2 x-1)^{r} \frac{d^{r}}{d x^{r}}\left(d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)\right)-2^{r} r!\binom{n}{r} d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)=0 \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

for the $r^{\text {th }}$ derivative of the descending diagonal polynomial. If we write $z=$ $d_{0}^{\lambda}(x)$ for simplified symbolism, result (2.15) appears in a more attractive visual form as, when $r=n$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2 x-1)^{n} z^{(n)}-2^{n} n!z=0 \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

or by (2.6),

$$
\begin{equation*}
z^{(n)}-2^{n}(\lambda)_{n}=0 \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe that (2.15) can also be expressed as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d^{r}}{d x^{r}}\left(d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)\right)=2^{r}(\lambda)_{r} d_{n-r}^{\lambda+r}(x), \quad r=1,2, \ldots, n, \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

on using $(\lambda)_{n}(\lambda+r)_{n-r}=(\lambda)_{n}$ and (2.6).
Note the formal equivalence of (2.15) "' and the known differential equation for Gegenbauer polynomials

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d^{r}}{d x^{r}} C_{n}^{\lambda}(x)=2^{r}(\lambda)_{r} C_{n-r}^{\lambda+r}(x) . \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Elementary calculations yield, additionally, by using (2.8) and (2.7),

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2 x-1) \frac{d}{d x}\left(d_{n}^{\lambda}(x)\right)=\frac{n}{\lambda+n} \frac{d}{d x}\left(d_{n+1}^{\lambda}(x)\right), \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

which differs in form from the corresponding result involving Gegenbauer polynomials.

## 3. SPECIAL CASES: CHEBYSHEV POLYNOMIALS

If we substitute $\lambda=1$ in the relevant results of the preceding section we obtain corresponding results already given in [3] for the special case (1.4) of the Chebyshev polynomials $U_{n}(x)$. [Allowance must be made for a small variation in notation, namely $d_{n}^{1}(x)=b_{n+1}(x)$ in [3]; e.g., $d_{4}^{1}(x)=(2 x-1)^{4}=b_{5}(x)$.]

Coming now to the similar results for the Chebyshev polynomials $T_{n}(x)$, we appreciate that the limiting process (1.3) requires a less obvious approach.

Let us write

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{D}_{n}^{\lambda}(x)=(n+1) d_{n+1}^{\lambda}(x)-n d_{n}^{\lambda}(x) \quad(n \geqslant 0) . \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

By careful analogy with the forms of (1.3), we may then define

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{n}(x)=\frac{1}{2} \lim _{\lambda \rightarrow 0}\left(\frac{\mathscr{D}_{n}^{\lambda}(x)}{\lambda}\right), \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

1985]
where $D_{n}(x)$ is the $n^{\text {th }}$ descending diagonal polynomial for $T_{n}(x)$.
Calculation yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{n}(x)=\frac{1}{2}(2 x-2)(2 x-1)^{n}=(x-1)(2 x-1)^{n} . \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Comparison should not be made with corresponding results produced in [3] where, it should be noted, each Chebyshev function is twice the corresponding Chebyshev polynomial in this paper. Accordingly, we have $20_{m}(x)=a_{n+2}(x)$ in [3]; e.g., $D_{4}(x)=(x-1)(2 x-1)^{4}=(1 / 2) \alpha_{6}(x)$.

Thus, we have shown that our results for the descending diagonals in the Pascal-type array of Gegenbauer polynomials are generalizations of corresponding results for the specialized Chebyshev polynomials, as expected.

## 4. GENERALIZED HUMBERT POLYNOMIALS

Along with many other polynomials, the Gegenbauer polynomials (and consequently the Chebyshev polynomials) are special cases of the generalized Humbert polynomial (see Gould [1]).

Generalized Humbert polynomials, which are represented by the symbol

$$
P_{n}(m, x, y, p, C)
$$

are defined by the generating function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(C-m x t+y t^{m}\right)^{p}=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_{n}(m, x, y, p, C) t^{n}, \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $m \geqslant 1$ is an integer and the other parameters are in general unrestricted.
Particular cases of the generalized Humbert polynomial are:

$$
\begin{cases}P_{n}\left(2, x, 1,-\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)=P_{n}(x) & \text { (Legendre, 1784) }  \tag{4.2}\\ P_{n}(2, x, 1,-1,1)=U_{n}(x) & \text { (Chebyshev, 1859) } \\ P_{n}(2, x, 1,-\lambda, 1)=C_{n}^{\lambda}(x) & \text { (Gegenbauer, 1874) } \\ P_{n}\left(3, x, 1,-\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)=\mathscr{P}_{n}(x) & \text { (Pincherle, 1090) } \\ P_{n}(m, x, 1,-\nu, 1)=\Pi_{n, m}^{\nu}(x) & \text { (Humbert, 1921) } \\ P_{n}(2, x,-1,-1,1)=\phi_{n+1}(x) & \text { (Byrd, 1963) } \\ P_{n}\left(m, x, 1,-\frac{1}{m}, 1\right)=P_{n}(m, x) & \text { (Kinney, 1963) }\end{cases}
$$

The recurrence relation for the generalized Humbert polynomial is

$$
\begin{equation*}
C n P_{n}-m(n-1-p) x P_{n-1}+(n-m-m p) y P_{n-m}=0 \quad(n \geqslant m \geqslant 1) \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have written $P_{n}=P_{n}(m, x, y, p, C)$ for brevity.
Suitable substitution of the parameters in (4.2) for Gegenbauer polynomials reduces (4.3) to (1.2).

In passing, it might be noted in (4.2) that Legendre polynomials are special cases of Gegenbauer polynomials occurring when $\lambda=\frac{1}{2}$. Hence, results for Gegenbauer polynomials $C_{n}^{\lambda}(x)$ in [4] and in this article may be specialized for the Legendre polynomials $C_{n}^{\frac{1}{2}}(x)$. Moreover, Gegenbauer polynomials are closely
related to Jacobi polynomials, and they may also be expressed in terms of hypergeometric functions.

Using the generating function for Fibonacci numbers $F_{n}$, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(1-x-x^{2}\right)^{-1}=\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} F_{n} x^{n-1}, \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

we readily see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{n}\left(2, \frac{1}{2},-1,-1,1\right)=F_{n+1}=\sum_{k=0}^{[n / 2]}\binom{n-k}{k}, \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

whence the recurrence relation (4.3) simplifies to the defining recurrence relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{n+1}-F_{n}-F_{n-1}=0 . \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Gould [1] remarks that Eq. (4.5) is better than the usual device of using Chebyshev or other polynomials with imaginary exponent for expressing Fibonacci numbers.

While it is not the purpose of this paper to pursue the properties of the generalized Humbert polynomial, it is thought that publicizing their connection with the polynomials under discussion-Gegenbauer and Chebyshev-may be a useful service.

To whet the appetite of the interested reader for further knowledge of the generalized Humbert polynomial, we append the explicit form given in [1]:

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{n}(m, x, y, p, C)=\sum_{k=0}^{[n / m]}\binom{p}{k}\binom{p-k}{n-m-k} C^{p-n+(m-1) k} y^{k}(-m x)^{n-m k}, \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

from which one may obtain the explicit forms of the special cases given in (4.2).

Likewise, the first few terms of the polynomials in (4.2) may be checked against the generalized terms given in [1]:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
P_{0}=C^{p}  \tag{4.8}\\
P_{1}=-p m x C^{p-1}+p\binom{p-1}{1-m} y(-m x)^{1-m} C^{p+m-2} \\
P_{2}=\binom{p}{2} C^{p-2 m^{2} x^{2}+p\binom{p-1}{2-m} C^{p+m-3} y(-m x)^{2-m}}
\end{array}\right.
$$

with

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{n}=\binom{p}{n} C^{p-n}(-m x)^{n} \quad(m>n) \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

## REFERENCES

1. H. W. Gould. "Inverse Series Relations and Other Expansions Involving Humbert Polynomials." Duke Math. J. 32, no. 4 (1965):697-712.
2. A. F. Horadam. "Polynomials Associated with Chebyshev Polynomials of the First Kind." The Fibonacci Quarterly 15, no. 3 (1977):255-257.
3. A. F. Horadam. "Chebyshev and Fermat Polynomials for Diagonal Functions." The Fibonacci Quarterly 17, no. 4 (1979):328-333.
(Please turn to page 307)

# FIBONACCI AND LUCAS NUMBERS OF THE FORM $3 z^{2} \pm 1$ 

JANNIS A. ANTONIADIS
University of Thessaloniki, Greece
(Submitted July 1983)

1. INTRODUCTION

The purpose of this paper, which is a continuation of [1], is to report some results regarding the generalized Fibonacci and Lucas numbers of the form $3 z^{2} \pm \mu$.

In particular, we show for the Fibonacci and Lucas numbers that the following relations hold:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
F_{m}=3 z^{2}+1 & \text { if and only if } m= \pm 1,2, \pm 7 \\
F_{m}=3 z^{2}-1 & \text { if and only if } m=-2, \pm 3, \pm 5 \\
L_{m}=3 z^{2}+1 & \text { if and only if } m=1,3,9 \\
L_{m}=3 z^{2}-1 & \text { if and only if } m=-1,0,5, \pm 8
\end{array}
$$

This author tried to show similar properties for other recursive sequences while working on class number problems for his Dissertation.

Throughout this paper we will make frequent use of the relations developed in [1]; thus, the numbering of the relations in this paper continues from that of [1].

Also, as in [1], d will always be a rational integer of the first kind and $\frac{a+b \sqrt{d}}{2}$ will be the fundamental solution of the Pellian equation $x^{2}-d y^{2}=-4$. The sequences $\left\{U_{m}\right\}$ and $\left\{V_{m}\right\}$ are as defined in [1].

## 2. PRELIMINARIES

Lemma 1: i) Let $a b \not \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$. Then the equation $U_{m}=3 z^{2}$ has
(a) the solutions $m=0,4$ if $d=5$,
(b) only the solution $m=0$ in all other cases.
ii) Let $b=1$ and $a \neq 0(\bmod 3)$. Then the equation $U_{m}=3 z^{2}$ has
(a) the solutions $m=0,4$ if $d=5$,
(b) the solutions $m=0,2$ if $a=3 z^{2}$,
(c) only the solution $m=0$ in all other cases.

Proof of i): According to our assumptions $\left(U_{m}\right)_{m \in Z}$ is periodic mod 3 with length of period 8 and 3 divides $U$ if and only if 4 divides $m$. Hence, $U_{m}=3 z^{2}$ implies $U_{2 n} V_{2 n}=3 z^{2}$, by (5). Since $n=0$ is an obvious solution, we assume $n \neq 0$.

Supported by the Deutsche Forschungsgemeinschaft.

Case 1. Let $n \neq 0(\bmod 3)$. Then $\left(U_{2 n}, V_{2 n}\right)=1$, by (10), and we obtain

$$
\left(U_{2 n}=3 z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n}=z_{2}^{2}\right) \quad \text { or } \quad\left(U_{2 n}=z_{1}^{2}, V_{2 n}=3 z_{1}^{2}\right)
$$

The first subcase is impossible, by (28). For the second, it is sufficient, by (30), to check only the value $n=1$ in case $a$ and $b$ are both perfect squares ( $n=6, d=5, L_{12}=322 \neq 3 z_{2}^{2}$ ).

For $n=1$, we have

$$
V_{2}=a^{2}+2=3 z_{2}^{2}, a=t^{2}, b=r^{2}
$$

That is, $t^{4}+2=3 z_{2}^{2}$. Using [3], the last diophantine equation has at most one solution, $\left(t, z_{2}\right)=( \pm 1, \pm 1)$, which corresponds to the value $d=5$.

Case 2. Let $n \equiv 0(\bmod 3), n \neq 0$. Equation (10) implies $\left(U_{2 n}, V_{2 n}\right)=2$, so we must have

$$
\left(U_{2 n}=2 z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n}=6 z_{2}^{2}\right) \quad \text { or } \quad\left(U_{2 n}=6 z_{1}^{2}, V_{2 n}=2 z_{2}^{2}\right)
$$

The first subcase is impossible because, by (31), the only possible value of $n$ for which $U_{2 n}=2 z_{1}^{2}$ is $n=3(d=5)$ for which $L_{6}=18 \neq 6 z_{2}^{2}$. The second subcase has, by (29) and direct computation, no solution for $n= \pm 3, d=5,29$. The proof of (ii) follows along the same lines as the proof of (i); hence, the details are omitted.

Lemma 2: Let $a \not \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$. Then the equation $V_{m}=3 z^{2}$ has the solutions $m= \pm 2$ if $a^{2}+2=3 z^{2}$ and no solution in all other cases.

Proof: Since $a \not \equiv 0(\bmod 3),\left(V_{m}\right)_{m \in Z}$ is periodic mod 3 with length of period 8 and 3 divides $V_{m}$ if and only if $m \equiv \pm 2(\bmod 8)$ 。

Case 1. Let $m \equiv \pm 2(\bmod 16)$. Then, $a^{2}+2=3 z^{2}$. The solutions of this equation are given in [4] by

$$
3 z+a \sqrt{3}=(3+\sqrt{3})(2+\sqrt{3})^{n} \text { for } n=0,1,2, \ldots
$$

If $m \neq \pm 2$, then (4) says we only have to consider the case $m \equiv 2(\bmod 16)$. We write $m=2+2 \cdot 3^{s} \cdot n$ where $8 \mid n$ and $3 \nmid n$. Then, by (22), $V_{m} \equiv-V_{2}\left(\bmod V_{n}\right)$. If $V_{m}=3 z^{2}$, we have $(3 z)^{2} \equiv-3 V_{2}\left(\bmod V_{n}\right)$ where $8 \ln$ and $3 \nmid n$, which is impossible since $V_{n} \equiv 2(\bmod 3),\left(V_{n}, 3\right)=1$, and $\left(V_{m}, V_{2}\right)=\left(2, V_{2}\right)=1$ imply $\left(-3 V_{2} / V_{n}\right)=1$ by (33).

Case 2. Let $m \equiv \pm 6(\bmod 16)$. If $m= \pm 6$, then $a^{6}+6 a^{4}+9 a^{2}+2=3 z^{2}$ or $\left(a^{2}+2\right)\left(a^{4}+4 a^{2}+1\right)=3 z^{2}$ so that $c\left(c^{2}-3\right)=3 z$ where $c=a^{2}+2 \equiv 0$ (mod 3) by our assumption on $a$. Since $\left(c, c^{2}-3\right)=3$, we need only check the following two subcases:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { (i) } c=3 z_{1}^{2}, \quad c^{2}-3=\left(3 z_{2}\right)^{2} \\
& \text { (ii) } c=\left(3 z_{1}\right)^{2}, \quad c^{2}-3=3 z_{2}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

By (i) we have $3 z_{2}= \pm 1$, which is impossible. By (ii), $3^{3} z_{1}^{2}-1=z_{2}^{2}$, which is impossible mod 3. Now let $m \equiv 6$ (mod 16) with $m \neq 6$. We write

$$
m=6+2 \cdot 3^{s} \cdot n, \text { where } 8 \ln , 3 \nmid n
$$

Then, by (22), $V_{m} \equiv-V_{6}\left(\bmod V_{n}\right)$. If $V_{m}=3 z^{2}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
(3 z)^{2} \equiv-3 V_{6}\left(\bmod V_{n}\right) \text { with } 8 \ln , 3 \nmid n \tag{62}
\end{equation*}
$$

By using (13) repeatedly with (4), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 V_{n}=2 V_{8 \lambda} \equiv \cdots \equiv \pm 2 V_{4}\left(\bmod V_{6}\right) . \tag{63}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now note that $\left(V_{6}, V_{4}\right)=\left(V_{4}, V_{2}\right)=1$ and $V_{6} \equiv 2(\bmod 8)$, since $a \equiv 1(\bmod 2)$. However,

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 V_{4} \equiv-2 V_{2}\left(\bmod V_{4}\right) \tag{64}
\end{equation*}
$$

and, by (22),

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 V_{4} \equiv-2 V_{0} \equiv-4\left(\bmod V_{2}\right) . \tag{65}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying the Jacobi symbol, we now have:

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\left(\frac{-3 V_{6}}{V_{n}}\right) & =(-1)\left(\frac{V_{6 / 2}}{V_{n}}\right)=-\left(\frac{V_{n}}{V_{6 / 2}}\right) \\
& =-\left(\frac{ \pm V_{4}}{V_{6 / 2}}\right), & & \text { by }(63) ; \\
& =-\left(\frac{V_{6 / 2}}{V_{4}}\right), & & \text { since } V_{6} \equiv 2(\bmod 8) ; \\
& =-\left(\frac{-2 V_{2}}{V_{4}}\right), & & \text { by }(64) ; \\
& =\left(\frac{V_{2}}{V_{4}}\right), & & \text { by }(19) ; \\
& =-1, \quad & & \text { by }(65) .
\end{array}
$$

Therefore, (62) has no solution and the Lemma follows.
Lemma 3: For the generalized Fibonacci numbers $U_{n}$ the following identity holds:

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{4 n \pm 1}=U_{2 n} V_{2 n \pm 1}+b \tag{66}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof: This is like the relation (36) of Lemma 2 in [1].
Lemma 4: Let $a \not \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$. Then the equation $V_{m}=6 z^{2}$ has no solution.
Proof: Since $a$ is odd and $a \not \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$, we have $a \equiv \pm 1(\bmod 6)$ or $a^{2} \equiv 1(\bmod$ 12). In this case the generalized Lucas numbers are periodic mod 6 with period 24 as are the usual Lucas numbers. Hence, it still holds that

$$
V_{m} \equiv 0(\bmod 6) \text { if and only if } m \equiv 6(\bmod 12),
$$

and

$$
V_{m} \equiv 18(\bmod 24) \text { if } m \equiv 6(\bmod 2) .
$$

With $V_{m}=6 z^{2}$, we now have $z^{2} \equiv 3(\bmod 4)$, which has no solution.

$$
\text { 3. FIBONACCI NUMBERS OF THE FORM } 3 z^{2} \pm 1
$$

From now on $b$ will always be 1 ; that is, $d=\alpha^{2}+4$.
Theorem 1: The equation $U_{m}=3 z^{2}+1, m \equiv 1(\bmod 2)$ has
(a) the solutions $m= \pm 1, \pm 7$, if $d=5$,
(b) the solutions $m= \pm 1, \pm 5$, if $d=13$,
(c) only the solutions $m= \pm 1$ in all other cases.

```
FIBONACCI AND LUCAS NUMBERS OF THE FORM 3z }\mp@subsup{}{}{2}\pm
```

Proof: For $m=4 n \pm 1$, (66) implies that $U_{2 n} V_{2 n \pm 1}=3 z^{2}$. If $n=0$, then $U_{2 n}=0$, so that $z=0$ is a solution which gives us $m= \pm 1$. Now assume that $n \neq 0$, then $U_{2 n} V_{2 n \pm 1} \neq 0$. Corollary 9 of [1] implies $\left(U_{2 n}, V_{2 n \pm 1}\right)=1$. Hence, we must have

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{2 n}=3 z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n \pm 1}=z_{2}^{2}, \tag{67}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{2 n}=z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n \pm 1}=3 z_{2}^{2} \tag{68}
\end{equation*}
$$

By using (28) and a direct computation of $U_{2 n}$, we find that (67) has a solution for $m=5$ if $d=13$, and one for $m=7$ if $d=5$. By using (30), we find that the possible values of $n$ for (68) to have a solution are $n=6$ if $d=5$, and $n=1$ if $a=t^{2}$.

When $n=6, d=5$, we have $L_{13}=521 \neq 3 z^{2}$ and $L_{11}=199 \neq 3 z^{2}$ so (68) has no solution in this case. When $n=1, a=t^{2}$, we have $V_{1}=3 z_{2}^{2}=\alpha$, which is impossible. Furthermore, $V_{3}=a^{3}+3 \alpha=3 z_{2}^{2}$, which implies that $a^{2}+3=3 w^{2}$ or $t^{4}+3=3 w^{2}$ or $27 t^{4}+1=w^{2}$. The last equation, by [2], has no solutions, so (68) is impossible.

Note that $m=-5, d=13$ and $m=-7, d=5$ are also solutions, by (3).
Theorem $1^{\prime}$ : The equation $U_{m}=3 z^{2}-1, m \equiv 1(\bmod 2)$ has only the solutions $m= \pm 3,15$ if $a^{2}+2=3 z^{2}$
and no solutions in all other cases.
Proof: This follows the arguments of Theorem 1 by using (36), Corollary 9, (28) and (29) from [1].

Theorem 2: Let $a^{2}+2=p$ where $p$ is a prime. The equation $U_{m}=3 z^{2}+\alpha, m \equiv 0$ (mod 2) has only the solution $m=2$.

Proof: Case 1. Let $m=4 n$. By (38), we have $U_{2 n+1} V_{2 n-1}=3 z^{2}$. But, Lemma 3 of [1] implies $\left(U_{2 n+1}, V_{2 n-1}\right)=V_{2}=p$, so the following possibilities must be checked:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
U_{2 n+1}=3 z_{1}^{2}, & V_{2 n-1}=z_{2}^{2} \\
U_{2 n+1}=z_{1}^{2}, & V_{2 n-1}=3 z_{2}^{2} \\
U_{2 n+1}=3 p z_{1}^{2}, & V_{2 n-1}=p z_{2}^{2} \\
U_{2 n+1}=p z_{1}^{2}, & V_{2 n-1}=3 p z_{2}^{2} \tag{72}
\end{array}
$$

Equation (69) has no solutions, since the possible values for which $V_{2 n-1}$ is a perfect square are given by (28) in [1] and none of them gives a solution to $U_{2 n+1}=3 z_{1}^{2}$.

Equation (70) has no solution either, because the values of $n$ for which $U_{2 n+1}=z^{2}$ are $n=0,-1$, which gives $V_{-1}=-\alpha \neq 3 z_{2}^{2}$ and $V_{-3}=-\left(\alpha^{3}+3 \alpha\right) \neq 3 z_{2}^{2}$.

If we write $2 n-1=4 \lambda \pm 1$ and apply (13) repeatedly, we find that

$$
2 V_{2 n-1} \equiv-2 V_{4 \lambda-4 \pm 1} \equiv \cdots \equiv \pm 2 V_{1}\left(\bmod V_{2}\right)
$$

Hence, if $V_{2-1}=p z_{2}^{2}=V_{2} z_{2}^{2}$, we have $V_{2}$ divides $\pm 2 V_{ \pm 1}$ or $a^{2}+2$ divides $\pm 2 \alpha$, which is impossible. Hence, (71) has no solution.

If we write $2 n+1=4 \lambda \pm 1$ and apply ( 13 repeatedly, we find that

$$
2 U_{2 n+1} \equiv-2 U_{4 \lambda-4 \pm 1} \equiv \cdots \equiv \pm 2 U_{1}\left(\bmod V_{2}\right) .
$$

## FIBONACCI AND LUCAS NUMBERS OF THE FORM $3 z^{2} \pm 1$

Hence, if $U_{2 n+1}=p z_{1}^{2}=V_{2} z_{1}^{2}$, we have $V_{2} \mid \pm 2$, which is impossible. Thus, (72) has no solution.

Case 2. Let $m=4 n-2$. Equation (40) implies $U_{2 n-2} V_{2 n}+\alpha=3 z^{2}+\alpha$, so $U_{2 n-2} V_{2 n}=3 z^{2}$.

If $n=1$, then $U_{2 n-2}=0$ and $z=0$ which is a solution giving $m=2$. When $n \neq 1$, then $U_{2 n-2} \neq 0$. Recalling Lemma 3 of [1], we see that $\left(U_{2 n-2}, V_{2 n}\right)$ divides $V_{2}=p$. Hence, we must check the following four possibilities:

$$
\begin{align*}
& U_{2 n-2}=3 z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n}=z_{2}^{2}  \tag{73}\\
& U_{2 n-2}=z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n}=3 z_{2}^{2}  \tag{74}\\
& U_{2 n-2}=3 p z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n}=p z_{2}^{2}  \tag{75}\\
& U_{2 n-2}=p z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n}=3 p z_{2}^{2} \tag{76}
\end{align*}
$$

Equation (73) has no solution by (28).
The solutions of $U_{2 n-2}=z_{1}^{2}$ are $(n=7, d=5),\left(n=2\right.$ if $\left.a=t^{2}\right)$, and $n=$ 1. For $n=7$, we have $L_{14}^{2}=843 \neq 3 z_{2}^{2}$. For $n=2, V_{4} \neq 3 z_{2}^{2}$ by Lemma 2 if $a \neq 0$ (mod 3), while $V_{4}=3 z_{2}^{2}$ if $a \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$ is obviously impossible. Since $n=1$ is also impossible, (74) has no solutions.

If $n \equiv 0(\bmod 2)$, then we can see that $V_{2 n} \neq p z_{2}^{2}$ by the same argument given for Case 1.

Now let $n \equiv 1(\bmod 2), n \neq 1$. Since $V_{-2 n}=V_{2 n}$, it is sufficient to consider only the case $n \equiv 1(\bmod 4)$, that is, $2 n \equiv 2(\bmod 8)$. We write $2 n=2+$ $2 t \cdot 3^{s}$ with $4 l t$ and $3 X t$ so that $V_{2 n} \equiv-V_{2}\left(\bmod V_{t}\right)$. Applying (13) repeatedly, and taking into account that $t=4 \lambda$, we obtain

$$
2 V_{t} \equiv \pm 2 V_{0} \equiv \pm 4\left(\bmod V_{2}\right) \text {, that is, }\left(V_{t}, V_{2}\right)=1 \text {, }
$$

which implies $p \nmid V_{t}$. Hence, $V_{2 n}=p z^{2}$ implies $(p z)^{2} \equiv-p^{2}\left(\bmod V_{t}\right)$, which is impossible since $\left(-p^{2} / V_{t}\right)=-1$ by (19). Therefore, (75) has no solution.

Now let $U_{2 n-2}=p z_{1}^{2}$. Equation (5) implies that $U_{n-1} V_{n-1}=p z_{1}^{2}$. If $n \not \equiv 1$ $(\bmod 3)$, then $\left(U_{n-1}, V_{n-1}\right)=1$ by (10), and we have

$$
\left(U_{n-1}=p z_{3}^{2}, V_{n-1}=z_{4}^{2}\right) \quad \text { or } \quad\left(U_{n-1}=z_{3}^{2}, V_{n-1}=p z_{4}^{2}\right) .
$$

By using (28) and (30), we see that both are impossible.
If $n \equiv 1(\bmod 3)$, then $(10)$ implies $\left(U_{n-1}, V_{n-1}\right)=2$, and we have

$$
\left(U_{n-1}=2 p z_{3}^{2}, V_{n-1}=2 z_{4}^{2}\right) \quad \text { or } \quad\left(U_{n-1}=2 z_{3}^{2}, V_{n-1}=2 p z_{4}^{2}\right) .
$$

The first is impossible by (29) and a direct computation of $U_{n-1}$; the second is impossible by (31) and a direct computation of $V_{n-1}$. [For the second case, with $n=4$, we should have $V_{3}=2 p z_{4}^{2}$, which is impossible since, otherwise, we would have $p=a^{2}+2$ dividing $\left.V_{3}=a\left(a^{2}+3\right)\right]$.

Theorem 2': Let $a^{2}+2=p$ where $p$ is a prime. The equation $U_{m}=3 z^{2}-\alpha, m \equiv 0$ (mod 2) has
(a) the solutions $m=-2,0,6$, if $\alpha=3 t^{2}$,
(b) only the solution $m=-2$ in all other cases.

Proof: The proof of this theorem follows that of Theorem $l^{\prime}$ with the exception of the case

$$
U_{2 n-1}=z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n+1}=3 z_{2}^{2}, \text { when } n=1
$$

Under these conditions, we have $V_{3}=3 z_{2}^{2}$, which can be transformed by simple reasoning into $27 \mu^{4}+1=v^{2}$, which has no solution by [2].

Corollary 1: (a) $F_{m}=3 z^{2}+1$ if and only if $m= \pm 1,2, \pm 7$.
(b) $F_{m}=3 z^{2}-1$ if and only if $m=-2, \pm 3, \pm 5$.
4. LUCAS NUMBERS OF THE FORM $3 z^{2} \pm 1$

Theorem 3: Let $a \not \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$. Then the equation $V_{m}=3 z^{2}+a, m \equiv 1(\bmod 2)$ has
(a) the solutions $m=1,3,9$ if $d=5$,
(b) only the solution $m=1$ in all other cases.

Proof: Case 1. Let $m=4 n-1$. Equation (42) implies that $V_{2 n-1} V_{2 n}=3 z^{2}$. However, $\left(V_{2 n-1}, V_{2 n}\right)=1$, so we have

$$
\left(V_{2 n-1}=z_{1}^{2}, \quad V_{2 n}=3 z_{2}^{2}\right) \quad \text { or } \quad\left(V_{2 n-1}=3 z_{1}^{2}, V_{2 n}=z_{2}^{2}\right) .
$$

For the first subcase, (28) implies
or

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
n=1 & \text { if } a=t^{2}, d \neq 5 \\
n=1,2 & \text { if } & d=5 \\
n=2 & \text { if } & d=13
\end{array}
$$

When $n=1$ and $a=t^{2}, V_{2 n}=3 z_{2}^{2}$ if and only if $3 z_{2}^{2}-t^{4}=2$. Ljunggren [3] has proved that this equation possesses only the solution $\left(z_{2}, t\right)=( \pm 1, \pm 1)$, which gives $a=1$ and so $d=5$.

For $n=2, d=5$, we have $L_{4}=7 \neq 3 z_{2}^{2}$, while for $n=2, d=13$, we obtain $L_{14}=119 \neq 3 z_{2}^{2}$.

By using (28) once more, we see that the second subcase has no solution.
Case 2. Let $m=4 n+1=2(2 n)+1$. Equation (42) implies that $V_{2 n} V_{2 n+1}-$ $2 a=3 z^{2}$. By (8) and (42), we see that

$$
\left\{V_{2 n}^{2}-2(-1)^{n}\right\}\left\{V V_{n+1}-(-1)^{n} a\right\}-2 a=3 z^{2}
$$

or

$$
\left(V_{n}^{3} V_{n+1}-(-1)^{n} a V_{n}^{2}-2(-1)^{n} V_{n} V_{n+1}=3 z^{2}\right.
$$

Hence, $V_{n} M_{n}=3 z^{2}$ with

$$
M_{n}=V_{n}^{2} V_{n+1}-(-1)^{n} a V_{n}-2(-1)^{n} V_{n}
$$

Let $p$ be an odd prime not equal to 3 with $p^{e} \| V_{n}$. Since $p \nmid M_{n}$, we have $e \equiv 0$ $(\bmod 2)$. This implies that $V_{n}=\omega^{2}$ or $V_{n}=2 w^{2}$ or $V_{n}=3 w^{2}$ or $V_{n}=6 w^{2}$.

When $V_{n}=w^{2}$, (28) implies

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
n=1 & \text { if } a=t^{2}, & d \neq 5 \\
n=1,3 & \text { if } & d=5 \\
n=3 & \text { if } & d=13
\end{array}
$$

When $n=1$ and $a=t^{2}$, we have $m=5$. Hence, we must examine the equation

$$
a^{5}+5 \alpha^{3}+5 \alpha=3 z^{2}+\alpha
$$

for solutions. According to our assumptions, this equation can be written as

$$
\left(a^{2}+2\right)^{2}+a^{2}=3 f^{2} .
$$

However, $a^{2} \equiv 1(\bmod 12)$ and $3 f^{2} \equiv 10(\bmod 12)$, so the equation is unsolvable.

By direct calculation, we can show that for all other possible values of $n$ no solutions exist.

Let $V_{n}=2 w^{2}$. Using (29) and direct calculation, we find that the unique solution in this case is $n=0$ or $m=1$.

Let $V_{n}=3 w^{2}$. In this case, Lemma 2 implies that solutions exist only for $n= \pm 2$ if $a^{2}+2=3 w_{1}^{2}$.

When $n=-2$, we have $m=-7$. Since $V_{-7}<0$, we know that $V_{-7} \neq 3 z+a$. Hence, we have only to check the case for $n=2$ or $m=9$, that is, the possible solutions of the equation $a^{9}+9 a^{7}+27 a^{5}+30 a^{3}+9 a=3 z^{2}+a$. Factoring, we have $a\left(a^{2}+2\right)\left(a^{6}+7 a^{4}+13 a^{2}+4\right)=3 z^{2}$ which, by replacing $a^{2}+2$ with $3 w_{1}^{2}$, becomes $a\left(a^{6}+7 a^{4}+13 a^{2}+4\right)=w_{2}^{2}$.

However, $\left(\alpha, a^{6}+7 a^{4}+13 \alpha^{2}+4\right)=(\alpha, 4)=1$, so it follows that

$$
a^{6}+7 a^{4}+13 a^{2}+4=s^{2} \quad \text { or } \quad\left(a^{2}+4\right)\left(a^{4}+3 a^{2}+1\right)=s^{2}
$$

Now, the greatest common divisor tells us that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(a^{2}+4, a^{4}+3 \alpha^{2}+1\right) & =\left(a^{2}+4,\left(a^{2}+4\right)-5\left(a^{2}+3\right)\right) \\
& =\left(a^{2}+4,5\left(a^{2}+3\right)\right) \\
& =\left(a^{2}+4,5\right)=1 \text { or } 5 .
\end{aligned}
$$

If $\left(a^{2}+4, a^{4}+3 a^{2}+1\right)=1$, it follows that $a^{2}+4=\lambda^{2}$ with $a=t^{2}$. This implies $a=0$, which is impossible since $a>0$.

Now let $\left(a^{2}+4, a^{4}+3 a^{2}+1\right)=5$. Then $a^{2}+4=5 \lambda_{1}^{2}$ and $a^{4}+3 a^{2}+1=5 \lambda_{2}^{2}$ with $a=t^{2} \equiv 1(\bmod 6)$. Recall that $t^{4}-5 \lambda_{1}^{2}=-4$ has the solutions $t=1$ and $t=2$ by (28). When $t=1, a=1$ and $d=5$. When $t=2, a=4$, which is impossible since $a \equiv 1(\bmod 2)$.

Therefore, in this case, we have only the solution $m=9, d=5$.
By Lemma 4, $V_{n}=6 w^{2}$ has no solutions.
Following the arguments of Theorem 3, we can also show
Theorem 4: Let $a \not \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$. Then the equation $V_{m}=3 z^{2}-a, m \equiv 1(\bmod 2)$ has
(a) the solutions $m=-1$, 5 if $d=5$,
(b) only the solution $m=-1$ in all other cases.

Theorem 5: The equation $L_{m}=3 z^{2}+1, m \equiv 0(\bmod 2)$ has no solution.
Proof: Case 1. Let $m=4 n$. Equation (8) implies that $L_{2 n}^{2}=L_{4 n}+2$, which is the same as $3 z^{2}+1=L_{2 n}^{2}-2$. Hence, $3\left(z^{2}+1\right)=L_{2 n}^{2}$, so that $3 \mid L_{2 n}$. Therefore, $2 n \equiv 2(\bmod 4)$ or $m \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$. Since for even $m, L_{-m}=L_{m}$, it is sufficient to consider only the case $m \equiv 4$ (16).

If $m=4$, then $L_{4}=7 \neq 3 z^{2}+1$.
Let $m \neq 4$. We write $m=4+2 n 3$ with $8 \mid n, 3 \nmid n$. Then $V_{m} \equiv-V\left(\bmod V_{n}\right)$ by (22). If $V_{m}=3 z^{2}+1$, we have $(3 z)^{2} \equiv-24\left(\bmod V_{n}\right)$, where $8 \mid n$ and $3 \nmid n$. Since for $81 n, V_{n} \equiv 2(\bmod 3)$, we can now apply the Jacobi symbol which is calculated to be -1 , by (19) and (20). Hence, no solution exists.

Case 2. Let $m=4 n+2$. Equation (8) gives $L_{2 n+1}^{2}=L_{4 n+2}-2$ or $L_{2 n+1}^{2}=$ $3 z^{2}-1$. But $L_{2 n+1}^{2}-5 F_{2 n+1}^{2}=-4$ and so $5 F_{2 n+1}^{2}=3\left(z^{2}+1\right)$. This implies that

## FIBONACCI AND LUCAS NUMBERS OF THE FORM $3 z^{2} \pm 1$

$3 \mid F_{2 n+1}$, which is impossible since 3 divides $F_{m}$ if and only if 4 divides $m$. Hence, in this case also, there are no solutions.

Theorem 6: The equation $L_{m}=3 z^{2}-1, m \equiv 0(\bmod 2)$ has only the solutions $m=0$, $\pm 8$.

Proof: The proof is the same as that of Theorem 3, where we take into account the fact that $L_{m} \equiv-1(\bmod 23)$ if 16 divides $n$.

Corollary 2: (a) $L_{m}=3 z^{2}+1$ if and only if $m=1,3$, 9 .
(b) $L_{m}=3 z^{2}-1$ if and only if $m=-1,0,5,18$.

Remark: We can apply (26) and (27) as in [1] in order to obtain some statements about the solutions of diophantine equations of the form

$$
D Y^{2}=A X^{4}+B X^{2}+C
$$

REFERENCES

1. J.A. Antoniadis. "Generalized Fibonacci Numbers and Some Diophantine Equations." The Fibonacci Quarterly 23, no. 3 (1985):199-213.
2. J.H. E. Cohn. "The Diophantine Equation $y^{2}=D x^{4}+1$, III." Mathem. Scandinav. 42 (1978):180-188.
3. W. Ljunggren. "Ein Satz uber die diophantische Gleichung $A X^{2}-B Y^{4}=C$ ( $C=1,2,4$ )." Tolfte Skandinaviska Matematikerkongressen i Lund (1953): 188-194.
4. H.-J. Stender. "Zur parametriesierung reell-quadratischer Zah1körper." J. fur die r. u. angew. Mathematik 311/312 (1979):291-301.
(Continued from page 299)
5. A. F. Horadam \& S. Pethe. "Polynomials Associated with Gegenbauer Polynomials." The Fibonacci Quarterly 19, no. 5 (1981):393-398.
6. D. V. Jaiswal. "On Polynomials Related to Tchebichef Polynomials of the Second Kind." The Fibonacci Quarterly 12, no. 3 (1974):263-265).

Note: All the particular cases listed in (4.2) are referenced in Gould [1] except P. F. Byrd, "Expansion of Analytic Functions in Polynomials Associated with Fibonacci Numbers," The Fibonacci Quarterly 1, no. 1 (1963):16-24.

# generalized wythoff numbers from simultaneous FIBONACCI REPRESENTATIONS 

MARJORIE BICKNELL-JOHNSON
Santa Clara Unified School District, Santa Clara, CA 95052
(Submitted September 1982)

## 1. INTRODUCTION

In developing a Zeckendorf theorem for double-ended sequences, Hoggatt and Bicknell-Johnson [1] found a remarkable pattern arising from applying Klarner's theorem [2],[3] on simultaneous representations using Fibonacci numbers. Here we study the properties of the array generated, after first providing enough background information to make this paper self-contained. We shall show relationships with the Lucas numbers, the Wythoff pair sequences, and generalized Wythoff numbers [7].

David Klarner [2] has proved
Klarner's Theorem: Given nonnegative integers $A$ and $B$, there exists a unique set of integers $\left\{k_{1}, k_{2}, k_{3}, \ldots, k_{r}\right\}$ such that

$$
A=F_{k_{1}}+F_{k_{2}}+\cdots+F_{k_{r}}, \quad B=F_{k_{1}+1}+F_{k_{2}+1}+\cdots+F_{k_{r}+1},
$$

for $\left|k_{i}-k_{j}\right| \geqslant 2, i \neq j$, where each $F_{i}$ is an element of the sequence $\left\{F_{i}\right\}_{-\infty}^{\infty}$, $F_{i+1}=F_{i}+F_{i-1}, F_{1}=1, F_{2}=1$.

Thus, to represent a single integer $m>0$, we merely solve

$$
A=0=F_{k_{1}+1}+F_{k_{2}+1}+\cdots+F_{k_{r}+1}, \quad B=m=F_{k_{1}}+F_{k_{2}}+\cdots+F_{k_{r}}
$$

which has a unique solution by Klarner's Theorem. A constructive method of solution is given in [3], and we will soon use this idea to generate a most interesting array.

We shall also need some properties of Wythoff pairs ( $a_{n}, b_{n}$ ), which are formed by letting $\alpha_{1}=1$ and taking $\alpha_{n}$ as the smallest positive integer not yet used, and letting $b_{n}=a_{n}+n$. Wythoff pairs have been discussed, among other sources, in [4], [5], [6], [7], and [8]. Early values are shown below.

$$
\begin{array}{rrrrrrrrrrrrrrr}
n: & 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 & 6 & 7 & 8 & 9 & 10 & 11 & 12 & 13 & 14 \\
a_{n}: & 1 & 3 & 4 & 6 & 8 & 9 & 11 & 12 & 14 & 16 & 17 & 19 & 21 & 22 \\
b_{n}: & 2 & 5 & 7 & 10 & 13 & 15 & 18 & 20 & 23 & 26 & 28 & 31 & 34 & 36
\end{array}
$$

We list the following properties:

$$
\begin{align*}
& a_{k}+k=b_{k}  \tag{1.1}\\
& a_{b_{n}}=a_{n}+b_{n} \quad \text { and } \quad b_{b_{n}}=a_{n}+2 b_{n}  \tag{1.2}\\
& a_{a_{n}}=b_{n}-1 \quad \text { and } \quad b_{a_{n}}=a_{n}+b_{n}-1
\end{aligned} \begin{aligned}
& a_{k+1}-a_{k}= \begin{cases}2, & k=a_{n} \\
1, & k=b_{n}\end{cases} \tag{1.3}
\end{align*}
$$

[Nov.

$$
b_{k+1}-b_{k}= \begin{cases}3, & k=a_{n}  \tag{1.5}\\ 2, & k=b_{n}\end{cases}
$$

Further, $\left(a_{n}, b_{n}\right)$ are related to the Fibonacci numbers in several ways, one being that, if $A=\left\{a_{n}\right\}$ and $B=\left\{b_{n}\right\}$, then $A$ and $B$ are the sets of positive integers for which the smallest Fibonacci number used in the unique Zeckendorf representation has respectively an even or an odd subscript [9].

Also, the Wythoff pairs are related to the Golden Section Ratio

$$
\alpha=(1+\sqrt{5}) / 2
$$

and recall that $F_{n}=\left(\alpha^{n}-\beta^{n}\right) /(\alpha-\beta)$, where $\beta=1 / \alpha$, as

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{n}=[n \alpha], \quad b_{n}=\left[n \alpha^{2}\right] \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $[x]$ is the greatest integer in $x$.
Lastly, we recall the generalized Wythoff numbers $A_{n}, B_{n}$, and $C_{n}$ of [7] with beginning values

$$
\begin{array}{rrrrrrrrrrrrrrr}
n: & 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 & 6 & 7 & 8 & 9 & 10 & 11 & 12 & 13 & 14 \\
A_{n}: & 1 & 4 & 5 & 8 & 11 & 12 & 15 & 16 & 19 & 22 & 23 & 26 & 29 & 30 \\
B_{n}: & 3 & 7 & 10 & 14 & 18 & 21 & 25 & 28 & 32 & 36 & 39 & 43 & 47 & 50 \\
C_{n}: & 2 & 6 & 9 & 13 & 17 & 20 & 24 & 27 & 31 & 35 & 38 & 42 & 46 & 49
\end{array}
$$

and the following properties useful in this paper:

$$
\begin{align*}
& A_{n}=2 a_{n}-n  \tag{1.7}\\
& B_{n}=a_{n}+2 n=b_{n}+n  \tag{1.8}\\
& C_{n}=a_{n}+2 n-1=b_{n}+n-1=a_{a_{n}}+n  \tag{1.9}\\
& C_{n}+1=B_{n} \text { and } C_{n}-1=A_{a_{n}}  \tag{1.10}\\
& A_{n+1}-A_{n}= \begin{cases}1, & n=b_{k} \\
3, & n=a_{k}\end{cases}  \tag{1.11}\\
& B_{n+1}-B_{n}= \begin{cases}3, & n=b_{k} \\
4, & n=a_{k}\end{cases}  \tag{1.12}\\
& C_{n+1}-C_{n}= \begin{cases}3, & n=b_{k} \\
4, & n=a_{k}\end{cases}  \tag{1.13}\\
& A_{a_{n}}=a_{n}+2 n-2 \text { and } B_{a_{n}}=3 a_{n}+n-1  \tag{1.14}\\
& A_{a_{b_{n}}}=A_{b_{a_{n}}}+1=A_{b_{a_{n}}+1} \tag{1.15}
\end{align*}
$$

The sequences $A_{n}, B_{n}$, and $C_{n}$ divide the positive integers into three disjoint subsets, classified by Zeckendorf representation using Lucas numbers [9].

## 2. AN ARRAY ARISING FROM KLARNER'S DUAL

ZECKENDORF REPRESENTATION
Recall the Klarner dual Zeckendorf representation given in §1, where

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
A=F_{k_{1}+1}+F_{k_{2}+1}+\cdots+F_{k_{r}+1}=0  \tag{2.1}\\
B=F_{k_{1}}+F_{k_{2}}+\cdots+F_{k_{r}}=n,
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $n=1,2,3, \ldots,\left|k_{i}-k_{j}\right| \geqslant 2, i \neq j$, and the Fibonacci number $F_{j}$ comes from the double-ended sequence $\left\{F_{j}\right\}_{-\infty}^{\infty}$. The constructive method described in our earlier work [3] for solving for the subscripts $k_{j}$ to represent $A$ and $B$ leads to a symbolic display with a generous sprinkling of Lucas numbers $L_{n}$ ( $L_{1}=1, L_{2}=3, L_{n+2}=L_{n+1}+L_{n}$ ) and Wythoff pairs.

Here we use only two basic formulas,

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{n+2}=F_{n+1}+F_{n} \quad \text { and } \quad 2 F_{n}=F_{n+1}+F_{n-2}, \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

to push both right and left in forming successive lines of the array. The display is for expressions for $B$ only; $A$ is a translation of one space to the right. At each step, $B=n$ and $A=0$.

The basic column centers under $F_{-1}$. We continue to add $F_{-1}=1$ at each step, using the rules given in (2.2) to simplify the result. For example, for $n=1$, we have $F_{-1}=1$. For $n=2, F_{-1}+F_{-1}=2 F_{-1}=F_{0}+F_{-3}=2$. For $n=3$, $F_{-1}+F_{0}+F_{-3}$ becomes $F_{1}+F_{-3}=1+2=3$. We display Table 2.1 on the following page.

Many patterns are discernible from Table 2.l. There are always the same number of successive entries in a given column. Under $F_{-2}$ there are $L_{1}$; under $F_{-3}, L_{2}$; under $F_{-4}, L_{3}$; and under $F_{-k}$, $L_{k+1}$ successive entries. The columns to the right of $F_{-1}$ (under $F_{0}$, for instance) have $L_{n} \pm 1$ alternately successive entries, but the same number of successive entries always appears in a given column. Also, we notice that once we have all spaces cleared except the extreme edges in the pattern being built, we start again in the middle, as in lines $4,8,19,48, \ldots, L_{2 k}+1, \ldots$.

Reading down the columns, we write the sequence of numbers first using that $F_{k}$ is its representation. For example, the sequence of numbers using $F_{-1}$ is 1 , $4,8,11,15,19, \ldots$, with first difference $\Delta_{1}=3$ and second difference $\Delta_{2}=4$. We want only the numbers first used when reading down the columns, so for $F_{-3}$ we would use $2,9,20,27, \ldots$, and ignore $3,4,10,11,21,22, \ldots$ We list sequences appearing beneath $F_{k}$ in Table 2.1 along with first and second differences:

$$
\begin{array}{rll}
F_{0}: 2,6,9,13,17,20,24,27, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=3, \Delta_{2}=4 \\
F_{1}: 3,10,14,21,28,32,39,43, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=7, \Delta_{2}=4 \\
F_{2}: 5,16,23,34,45,52, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=11, \Delta_{2}=7 \\
F_{3}: 7,25,36,54,72, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=18, \Delta_{2}=11 \\
F_{4}: 12,41,59,88, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=29, \Delta_{2}=18 \\
F_{-1}: 1,4,8,11,15,19,22,26, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=3, \Delta_{2}=4 \\
F_{-2}: 5,12,16,23,30,34,41,45, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=7, \Delta_{2}=4 \tag{continued}
\end{array}
$$

Table 2.1 $F_{n}$ Used To Represent $B$ from Klarner's Theorem Subscript $n$ :


$$
\begin{array}{lll}
F_{-3}: & 2,9,20,27,38,49, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=7, \Delta_{2}=11 \\
F_{-4}: 12,30,41,59,77,88, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=18, \Delta_{2}=11 \\
F_{-5}: & 5,23,52,70,99, \ldots & \Delta_{1}=18, \Delta_{2}=29
\end{array}
$$

Surely the reader sees the Lucas numbers $1,3,4,7,11,18,29, \ldots$, as the first and second differences. In the next section, we write formulas for each term in the sequences given, and find both Lucas numbers and the Wythoff pair numbers.

As a final observation, notice that the sequences associated with $F_{k}$ when $k$ is a negative odd integer have different behavior than all the others listed. For those sequences, $\Delta_{2}>\Delta_{1}$, and successive differences follow the pattern $\Delta_{1}, \Delta_{2}, \Delta_{1}, \Delta_{2}, \Delta_{2}, \ldots$, while all the others have $\Delta_{2}<\Delta_{1}$ and a pattern of successive differences that begins $\Delta_{1}, \Delta_{2}, \Delta_{1}, \Delta_{1}, \Delta_{2}, \ldots$.

## 3. LUCAS NUMBERS AND THE WYTHOFF PAIRS

We write the general term $u_{n}$ for the sequence of numbers first using $F_{k}$ in its representation as observed from Table 2.1 for $k \geqslant 0$.

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
F_{0}: & u_{n}=2 n+a_{n}-1 \\
F_{1}: & u_{n}=n+3 a_{n}-1 \\
F_{2}: & u_{n}=3 n+4 a_{n}-2 \\
F_{3}: & u_{n}=4 n+7 a_{n}-4 \\
F_{4}: & u_{n}=7 n+11 a_{n}-6 \\
F_{5}: & u_{n}=11 n+18 a_{n}-11 \\
F_{6}: & u_{n}=18 n+29 a_{n}-17
\end{array}
$$

Again we see the Lucas numbers $L_{n}$, defined by

$$
L_{1}=1, L_{2}=3, \text { and } L_{n+1}=L_{n}+L_{n-1}
$$

Observe that the last terms are either $L_{n}$ or one less than $L_{n}$, and the pattern of general terms seems to be

$$
F_{k}: \quad u_{n}=L_{k} n+L_{k+1} a_{n}-\left[L_{k}-\left(1+(-1)^{k}\right) / 2\right]
$$

where $a_{n}$ is the first member of a Wythoff pair.
Theorem 3.1: The sequence of numbers first using $F_{k}, k \geqslant 0$, in its representation arising from Klarner's theorem is given by

$$
F_{k}: \quad u_{n}=n L_{k}+a_{n} L_{k+1}-\left[L_{k}-\left(1+(-1)^{k}\right) / 2\right] .
$$

Proof: From [8], all Fibonacci representations can be put in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{n}=\left(2 n-1-a_{n}\right) \Delta_{2}+\left(a_{n}-n\right) \Delta_{1}+u_{1} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Delta_{1}$ and $\Delta_{2}$ are the first and second differences and $u_{1}$ is the beginning term of the sequence. By the method of generation of the array,

$$
u_{1}= \begin{cases}L_{k+1}, & k \text { even } \\ L_{k+1}+1, & k \text { odd }\end{cases}
$$

and $\Delta_{2}=L_{k+2}$, $\Delta_{1}=L_{k+3}$ for $k \geqslant 1$. Substitution of these values into (3.1) yields the result quite quickly.

For $k=0$, we note that the sequence for $F_{0}$ can be written from (3.1) by letting $\Delta_{1}=3, \Delta_{2}=4$, and $u_{1}=2$.

The sequence of general terms for the sequences using $F_{k}$ when $\mathcal{K}$ is negative gives us a different story. First, take $k$ negative and even:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
F_{-2}: & u_{n}=n+3 a_{n}+1
\end{array} \quad \Delta_{1}=7, \Delta_{2}=4, ~\left(\Delta_{1}=18, \Delta_{2}=11\right.
$$

suggesting

$$
F_{-k}: \quad u_{n}=n L_{k-1}+a_{n} L_{k}+1 \quad \Delta_{1}=L_{k+2}, \quad \Delta_{2}=L_{k+1}
$$

When $k$ is negative and odd, we let $m=n-1$ and 1ist

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
F_{-1}: & u_{n}=2 m+a_{m}+1 \\
F_{-3}: & u_{n}=3 m+4 a_{m}+2 \\
F_{-5}: & u_{n}=7 m+11 a_{m}+5
\end{array}
$$

suggesting

$$
F_{-k}: \quad u_{n}=m I_{k-1}+a_{m} L_{k}+L_{k-2}+1
$$

Theorem 3.2: The sequence of numbers first using $F_{-k}$ in its representation is given by
(i) $F_{-2 j}: \quad u_{n}=n L_{2 j-1}+a_{n} L_{2 j}+1$;
(ii) $F_{-1}: \quad u_{n}=2(n-1)+a_{n-1}+1$;
(iii) $F_{-(2 j+1)}, j>0: \quad u_{n}=(n-1) L_{2 j}+a_{n-1} L_{2 j+1}+L_{2 j-1}+1$.

Proof: (i) follows readily from (3.1) by taking

$$
\Delta_{1}=L_{2 j+2}, \Delta_{2}=L_{2 j+3}, \text { and } u_{1}=L_{2 j+1}+1
$$

(ii) is proved by mathematical induction. Note that (ii) is true for early values. Study the pattern of successive differences $\Delta_{1}=3, \Delta_{2}=4$, and by the rules for generation of the array, we have

$$
u_{n+1}-u_{n}= \begin{cases}3, & n-1=b_{i} \\ 4, & n-1=a_{j}\end{cases}
$$

Assume $u_{k}=2(k-1)+a_{k-1}+1$. Then, when $k-1=b_{i}$, (1.4) lets us write

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_{k+1}=3+u_{k} & =3+2(k-1)+a_{k-1}+1 \\
& =3+2(k-1)+a_{k} \\
& =2 k+a_{k}+1
\end{aligned}
$$

When $k-1=\alpha_{j}$, we again apply (1.4), and

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_{k+1}=4+u_{k} & =4+2(k-1)+a_{k-1}+1 \\
& =2 k+\left(a_{k-1}+2\right)+1 \\
& =2 k+a_{k}+1,
\end{aligned}
$$

GENERALIZED WYTHOFF NUMBERS FROM SIMULTANEOUS FIBONACCI REPRESENTATIONS
so that $u_{k+1}$ again has the form of (ii), establishing (ii) by mathematical induction.

The general case (iii) can be proved by mathematical induction in a similar way by using (1.4), if we take $\Delta_{1}=L_{2 j+2}, \Delta_{2}=L_{2 j+3}$, and $u_{1}=L_{2 j-1}+1$. We again have $\Delta_{1}$ when $n-1=b_{i}$ and $\Delta_{2}$ when $n-1=a_{j}$.

Corollary 3.2: A second formula for the sequence of numbers first using $F_{-k}$ in its representation is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
F_{-2 j}: & u_{n}=b_{n} L_{2 j-1}+a_{n} L_{2 j-2}+1, j>0 ; \\
F_{-1}: & u_{n}=n+b_{n-1} \\
F_{-(2 j+1)}: & u_{n}=b_{n-1} L_{2 j}+\left(a_{n-1}+1\right) L_{2 j-1}+1, j>0
\end{aligned}
$$

Proof: Change the form of the sequence for $F_{2 j}$ given in Theorem 3.2 by applying (1.1):

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_{n}=n L_{2 j-1}+a_{n} L_{2 j}+1 & =n L_{2 j-1}+a_{n} L_{2 j-1}+a_{n} L_{2 j-2}+1 \\
& =b_{n} L_{2 j-1}+a_{n} L_{2 j-2}+1 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Again apply (1.1) to $F_{-1}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_{n}=2(n-1)+a_{n-1}+1 & =(n-1)+\left(n-1+a_{n-1}\right)+1 \\
& =n+b_{n-1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The proof for $F_{-(2 j+1)}$ is similar.
If we take $k$ negative and odd, and apply (3.1) to write the terms of the sequences, we observe

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
F_{-1}: & u_{n}=5 n-a_{n}-3 \\
F_{-3}: & u_{n}=15 n-4 a_{n}-9 \\
F_{-5}: & u_{n}=40 n-11 a_{n}-24
\end{array}
$$

leading us to
Theorem 2.3: If $k$ is odd and greater than 1 , then the sequence of numbers first using $F_{-k}$ in its representation arising from Klarner's Theorem is given by

$$
F_{-k}: \quad u_{n}=5 n F_{k+1}-L_{k} a_{n}-5 F_{k}+1
$$

Proof: Let $u_{1}=L_{k-2}+1, \Delta_{2}=L_{k+2}$, and $\Delta_{1}=L_{k+1}$ in (3.1) and simplify using $L_{k+2}+L_{k}=5 F_{k+1}$.

## 4. THE GENERALIZED WYTHOFF NUMBERS

The generalized Wythoff numbers $A_{n}, B_{n}$, and $C_{n}$ of [7] provide another description of the general term of the sequences arising from using $F_{k}$ in the representation from Klarner's theorem. Observe that, for $F_{0}$,

$$
u_{n}=2 n+a_{n}-1=C_{n}
$$

by (1.9). Each sequence we have generated is a subsequence of the sequence for $A_{n}, B_{n}$, or $C_{n}$. The sequences for $F_{0}$ and $F_{-3}$ contain only $C_{i}$ 's, while the sequences for $F_{2 k+1}$ contain only $B_{i} ' s, k \geqslant 0$. All of the other sequences contain $A_{i}$ 's exclusively.

Theorem 4.1: The sequences arising from first using $F_{2 k+1}, k \geqslant 0$, in the representation from Klarner's Theorem are

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
F_{1}: \quad u_{n}=B_{a_{n}} \\
F_{3}: \quad u_{n}=B_{b_{a_{n}}} \\
F_{5}: \quad u_{n}=B_{b_{b_{a_{n}}}} \\
F_{2 k+1}, \quad k \geqslant 0: \quad u_{n}=B_{b} \because b_{a_{a_{n}}}
\end{array}
$$

Proof: We simplify the form $B_{i}$ to demonstrate that $u_{n}$ has the form given by Theorem 3.1. For $F_{1}$, observe (1.14).

For $F_{3}$, we apply (1.8) and then (1.2) and (1.3) in sequence finishing with (1.1) to obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
B_{b_{a_{n}}} & =a_{b_{a_{n}}}+2 b_{a_{n}}=\left(a_{a_{n}}+b_{a_{n}}\right)+2 b_{a_{n}}=\left(b_{n}-1\right)+3\left(a_{n}+b_{n}-1\right) \\
& =4 b_{n}+3 a_{n}-4=4\left(n+a_{n}\right)+3 a_{n}-4=4 n+7 a_{n}-4
\end{aligned}
$$

For $F_{5}$, we apply the same sequence of steps repeatedly to reduce the subscripted subscripts. For $F_{2 k+1}$, the reduction of subscripted subscripts will always follow the same steps repeatedly. We show Lemma 4.1 to demonstrate one step of the subscript-reduction process and to show that we will end with the required form in terms of Lucas numbers.

Lemma 4.1: $L_{i+1} \underbrace{b_{b}}_{k} \cdot L_{i} \underbrace{b_{b}}_{k a_{n}} \because \ddots_{a_{n}}=L_{i+3} a_{k-1}^{b_{b}} \because \dot{b}_{a_{n}}+L_{i+2}{ }_{k-1}^{b_{b}} \because \ddots_{a_{n}}$
Proof: Apply (1.2) followed by (1.1).

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =L_{i+1} a_{k-1}+L_{i+2} \underbrace{b_{b}}_{b_{a_{n}}} \ddots_{b_{a_{n}}} \\
& =L_{i+1} a_{b_{b}}+L_{i+2}(\underbrace{b_{b}}_{k-1} \because_{b_{a_{n}}}+a_{k-1}^{b_{b}} \ddots_{b_{a_{n}}}) \\
& =L_{i+3} a_{b}^{b_{b}}+L_{i+2} b_{b} . b_{b_{a_{n}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Theorem 4.2: $F_{0}: u_{n}=C_{n}, F_{-1}: u_{n}=A_{a_{n-1}+1}$, and $F_{-3}: u_{n}=C_{a_{a_{n-1}+1}}$

Proof: The form for $F_{0}$ follows by comparing (1.9) and Theorem 3.1. For $F_{-1}$, we apply (1.11) and (1.14) and then compare with Theorem 3.2:

$$
A_{a_{n-1}+1}=A_{a_{n-1}}+3=\left(a_{n-1}+2(n-1)-2\right)+3=2(n-1)+a_{n-1}+1
$$

For $F_{-3}$, by (1.9) followed by (1.3), (1.4), and (1.5):

$$
\begin{aligned}
c_{a_{a_{n-1}+1}} & =a_{a_{a_{n-1}+1}}+2 a_{a_{n-1}+1}-1=\left(b_{a_{n-1}+1}-1\right)+2 a_{a_{n-1}+1}-1 \\
& =\left(b_{a_{n-1}}+3\right)-1+2\left(a_{a_{n-1}}+2\right)-1=b_{a_{n-1}}+2 a_{a_{n-1}}+5
\end{aligned}
$$

Next, use (1.3) finished by (1.1),

$$
\begin{aligned}
C_{a_{n-1}+1} & =\left(a_{n-1}+b_{n-1}-1\right)+2\left(b_{n-1}-1\right)+5=a_{n-1}+2 b_{n-1}+2 \\
& =a_{n-1}+3\left(a_{n-1}+(n-1)\right)+2=3(n-1)+4 a_{n-1}+2,
\end{aligned}
$$

and compare with Theorem 3.2.
Theorem 4.3: $\quad F_{2}: \quad u_{n}=A_{a_{b_{n}}}=A_{b_{a_{n}}+1}$

$$
F_{4}: \quad u_{n}=A_{b_{b_{a_{n}}}}
$$

$F_{2 k}, k>0: u_{n}=\underbrace{A_{b_{b}}+1}_{k}$
Proof: For $F_{2}$, use (1.15) and (1.14), followed by (1.2) and (1.1):

$$
\begin{aligned}
A_{a_{b_{n}}} & =a_{b_{n}}+2 b_{n}-2=\left(b_{n}+a_{n}\right)+2 b_{n}-2 \\
& =3\left(n+a_{n}\right)+a_{n}-2=3 n+4 a_{n}-2
\end{aligned}
$$

Then compare with $u_{n}$ as given in Theorem 3.1.
For $F_{4}$, first apply (1.15) and then (1.7). After than, use (1.2) followed by (1.1) repeatedly to reduce the subscripted subscripts.

$$
\begin{aligned}
A_{b_{b_{a_{n}}}} & =A_{b_{b_{a_{n}}}}+1=2 a_{b_{b_{a_{n}}}}-b_{b_{a_{n}}}+1=2\left(a_{b_{a_{n}}}+b_{b_{a_{n}}}\right)-b_{b_{a_{n}}}+1 \\
& =2 a_{b_{a_{n}}}+\left(a_{b_{a_{n}}}+b_{a_{n}}\right)+1=3\left(a_{a_{n}}+b_{a_{n}}\right)+b_{a_{n}}+1 \\
& =3 a_{a_{n}}+4\left(a_{a_{n}}+a_{n}\right)+1=7\left(b_{n}-1\right)+4 a_{n}+1 \\
& =7\left(a_{n}+n\right)+4 a_{n}-6=7 n+11 a_{n}-6
\end{aligned}
$$

Now compare with Theorem 3.1.
For $F_{2 k}$, the steps are always the same as for $F_{4}$, except for more repetitions.

Theorem 4.4: $F_{-2}: \quad u_{n}=A_{b_{n}+1}$

$$
F_{-4}: \quad u_{n}=A_{b_{b_{n}}+1}
$$

$$
F_{-2 k}, k>0: u_{n}=\underbrace{A_{b_{b}}+1}_{k}
$$

Proof: Use (1.15) and (1.7). Then reduce the subscripted subscripts repeatedly by applying (1.2) followed by (1.1), and compare with Theorem 3.2. Because the proof is so much like that for $F_{4}$ and $F_{2 k}$ in Theorem 4.3, we show only $F_{-2}$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
A_{b_{n}+1}=A_{b_{n}}+1 & =2 a_{b_{n}}-b_{n}+1=2\left(a_{n}+b_{n}\right)-b_{n}+1 \\
& =2 a_{n}+\left(a_{n}+n\right)+1=3 a_{n}+n+1 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Theorem 4.5: $\quad F_{-5}: \quad u_{n}=A_{a_{a_{a_{n-1}+1}}}$

$$
F_{-7}: \quad u_{n}=A_{a_{a_{a_{a_{a_{n-1}}+1}}}}
$$

$$
F_{-(2 k+1)}, k \geqslant 2: \quad u_{n}=A_{2 k-3} \underbrace{}_{a_{a}} \ddots_{a_{a_{n-1}+1}}
$$

Proof: In a manner similar to the proofs of Theorem 4.2 and Theorem 4.3, the subscripted subscripts can be painfully reduced, eventually, to match the form of Theorem 3.2. But, we almost have subscripted subscripts using the Wythoff pairs numbers $a_{n}$ and $b_{n}$, except for the last subscript.

We apply results of [8]. Let $U=\left\{u_{n}\right\}_{n=1}^{\infty}$ be a sequence of integers. If $U^{*}$ is a subsequence of $U$ such that the general term is formed by subscripted subscripts taken from the Wythoff pair numbers, then we give each $\alpha$-subscript weight 1 and each $b$-subscript weight 2 . Then, $U^{*}$ has first and second differences $\Delta_{1}^{*}$ and $\Delta_{2}^{*}$ given by

$$
\Delta_{2}^{*}=F_{w+1} \Delta_{2}+F_{w} \Delta_{1} \quad \text { and } \quad \Delta_{1}^{*}=F_{w} \Delta_{2}+F_{w-1} \Delta_{1},
$$

where $w$ is the weight of the sequence and $\Delta_{1}$ and $\Delta_{2}$ are the first and second differences of $U$, the original sequence.

Notice that $F_{-5}$ has weight 4 because the last subscript could be either $\alpha_{i}$ or $b_{j}$. $A_{a_{n-1}+1}$ is the original sequence, so we have $\Delta_{1}=3, \Delta_{2}=4$ because, by Theorem 4.2, we are looking at the sequence for $F_{-1}$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Delta_{2}^{*}=4 F_{5}+3 F_{4}=4 \cdot 5+3 \cdot 3=29=L_{7} \\
& \Delta_{1}^{*}=4 F_{4}+3 F_{3}=4 \cdot 3+3 \cdot 2=18=L_{6}
\end{aligned}
$$

where these are the known value for $F_{-5}$. Since we know $u_{1}$ for $F_{-5}$, we must have the same sequence.

For $F_{-(2 k+1)}, k \geqslant 2$, the weight is $2 k$, and

$$
\Delta_{2}^{*}=4 F_{2 k+1}+3 F_{2 k}=L_{2 k+3}
$$

$$
\Delta_{1}^{*}=4 F_{2 k}+3 F_{2 k-1}=L_{2 k+2}
$$

which we recognize from earlier sections.
Discussion: The weights for all of the other sequences for $F_{k}$ are easier to calculate. For example, $F_{2 k}$ in Theorem 4.3 has weight $2 k+1$ and we can use $A_{n}$ as the original sequence, with $\Delta_{1}=3, \Delta_{2}=1$, so that

$$
\Delta_{1}^{*}=3 F_{2 k+2}+F_{2 k+1}=L_{2 k+3} \quad \text { and } \quad \Delta_{2}^{*}=3 F_{2 k+1}+F_{2 k}=L_{2 k+2}
$$

which we recognize. From Theorem 4.1, the weight of $F_{2 k+1}$ is also $2 k+1$, and $B_{n}$ gives the original sequence, so that $\Delta_{1}=4, \Delta_{2}=3$,

$$
\Delta_{1}^{*}=4 F_{2 k+2}+3 F_{2 k+1}=L_{2 k+4} \quad \text { and } \quad \Delta_{2}^{*}=4 F_{2 k+1}+3 F_{2 k}=L_{2 k+3},
$$

which again are known from earlier work.
Notice that we can use original sequences to relate all of the sequences of this paper to the sequences for $F_{0}, F_{1}, F_{-1}$, and $F_{-2}$, by looking at the next to last subscript in $u_{n}$. The original sequence related to $F_{-(2 k+1)}$ then is

$$
A_{a_{n-1}+1}
$$

the sequence for $F_{-1}$. Even the sequence for $F_{-3}$ is so related, because

$$
C_{a_{n-1}+1}=A_{a_{n-1}+1}+1
$$

Now, $F_{2 k+1}$ has original sequence $B_{a_{n}}$, which is $F_{1}$, while $F_{-2 k}$ goes with $A_{b_{n}}$, which gives $F_{-2}$. Lastly, $F_{2 k}$ has original sequence $A_{a_{n}}$, which is related to $F_{0}$, since $C_{n}=A_{a_{n}}+1$.

Further, all of the sequences are related to the sequences, for $F_{-1}, F_{0}$, or $F_{1}$. All of the sequences for $F_{2 k+1}$ are subsequences of $B_{n}$ and thus are related to $F_{1} ; F_{-3}$ and $F_{0}$ have sequences that are subsequences of $C_{n}$. All of the other sequences are subsequences of $A_{n}$, making them related to the sequence for $F_{-1}$.

## REFERENCES

1. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& Marjorie Bickne11-Johnson. "Additive Partitions of the Positive Integers and Generalized Fibonacci Representations." The Fibonacci Quarterly 22, no. 1 (1984):2-21.
2. David A. Klarner. "Partitions of $N$ into Distinct Fibonacci Numbers." The Fibonacci Quarterly 6, no. 4 (1968):235-243.
3. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& Marjorie Bickne11. "Generalized Fibonacci Polynomials and Zeckendorf's Theorem." The Fibonacci Quarterly 11, no. 4 (1973): 399-413.
4. W. W. Rouse Ball. Mathematical Recreations and Essays. Rev. by H. S. M. Coxeter. New York: Macmillan, 1962, pp. 36-40.
5. A. F. Horadam. "Wythoff Pairs." The Fibonacci Quarterly 16, no. 2 (1978): 147-151.
6. R. Silber. "A Fibonacci Property of Wythoff Pairs." The Fibonacci Quarterly 14, no. 4 (1976):380-384.
7. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., Marjorie Bicknell-Johnson, \& Richard Sarsfield. "A Generalization of Wythoff's Game." The Fibonacci Quarterly 17, no. 3 (1979): 198-211.
8. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& Marjorie Bicknell-Johnson. "Sequence Transforms Related to Representations Using Generalized Fibonacci Numbers." The Fibonacci Quarterly 20, no. 4 (1982):289-299.
9. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& Marjorie Bickne11-Johnson. "Lexicographic Ordering and Fibonacci Representations." The Fibonacci Quarterly 20, no. 3 (1982): 193-218.

# INVERSE TRIGONOMETRICAL SUMMATION FORMULAS INVOLVING PELL POLYNOMIALS 

BRO. J. M. MAHON
Catholic College of Education, Sydney 2060, Australia
A. F. HORADAM

University of New England, Armidale 2351, Australia
(Submitted September 1983)

1. Introduction

Pell polynomials $P_{n}(x)$ and Pell-Lucas Polynomials $Q_{n}(x)$ are defined in [3] by the recurrence relation and initial conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{n+2}(x)=2 x P_{n+1}(x)+P_{n}(x) \quad P_{0}(x)=0, P_{1}(x)=1 \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q_{n+2}(x)=2 x Q_{n+1}(x)+Q_{n}(x) \quad Q_{0}(x)=2, Q_{1}(x)=2 x \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Properties of these polynomials are also set out in [3]. Among these, the most important for our current purposes are the following:
and

$$
\left.\begin{array}{l}
P_{n}(x)=\frac{\alpha^{n}-\beta^{n}}{\alpha-\beta} \\
Q_{n}(x)=\alpha^{n}+\beta^{n} \tag{1.4}
\end{array}\right\} \quad \text { Binet forms }
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha=x+\sqrt{x^{2}+1}, \quad \beta=x-\sqrt{x^{2}+1} \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

are the roots of the characteristic equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda^{2}-2 x \lambda-1=0 \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

of the recurrences (1.1) and (1.2), so that:

$$
\left.\begin{array}{l}
\alpha+\beta=2 x, \quad \alpha-\beta=2 \sqrt{x^{2}+1}, \quad \alpha \beta=-1 ; \\
P_{n+1}(x) P_{n-1}(x)-P_{n}^{2}(x)=(-1)^{n}, \\
Q_{n+1}(x) Q_{n-1}(x)-Q_{n}^{2}(x)=(-1)^{n-1} \cdot 4\left(x^{2}+1\right) ; \\
P_{n+1}(x)+P_{n-1}(x)=Q_{n}(x) ; \\
Q_{n+1}(x)+Q_{n-1}(x)=4\left(x^{2}+1\right) P_{n}(x) ; \\
P_{n}(x) Q_{n}(x)=P_{2 n}(x)
\end{array}\right\} \begin{aligned}
& \text { Simson's }  \tag{1.12}\\
& \text { formuZas }
\end{aligned}
$$

When $x=1, P_{n}(1)=P_{n}$ and $Q_{n}(1)=Q_{n}$ reduce to the Pell numbers and the "Pell-Lucas" numbers, respectively. On the other hand, $x=\frac{1}{2}$ leads to $P_{n}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)=$ $F_{n}$ and $Q_{n}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)=L_{n}$, the Fibonacci and Lucas numbers, respectively.

Analogous results to some of those obtained below occur in [2], which provided the stimulus for this article.

## 2. INVERSE TANGENT AND COTANGENT FORMULAS

Calculation using (1.3) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{2 n+1}(x) P_{2 n+2}(x)-P_{2 n}(x) P_{2 n+3}(x)=2 x \quad(n \geqslant 0) . \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting for $P_{2 n+3}(x)$ from (1.1) and rearranging, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{2 n}(x)=\frac{\left(P_{2 n+1}(x) / 2 x\right) P_{2 n+2}(x)-1}{\left(P_{2 n+1}(x) / 2 x\right)+P_{2 n+2}(x)}, \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

which can be expressed trigonometrically as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\cot ^{-1} P_{2 n}(x)=\cot ^{-1}\left(P_{2 n+1}(x) / 2 x\right)+\cot ^{-1} P_{2 n+2}(x) \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Summing, we derive

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{r=0}^{n} \cot ^{-1}\left(P_{2 r+1}(x) / 2 x\right)=\frac{\pi}{2}-\cot ^{-1} P_{2 n+2}(x), \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $\cot ^{-1} 0=\pi / 2$. Setting $x=1$ and letting $n \rightarrow \infty$, we have a result about Pe11 numbers $P_{n}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \cot ^{-1}\left(P_{2 r+1} / 2\right)=\frac{\pi}{2}, \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

while putting $x=\frac{1}{2}$ leads to the known summation formula involving Fibonacci numbers $F_{n}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{r=0}^{\infty} \cot ^{-1} F_{2 r+1}=\frac{\pi}{2} . \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next,

$$
\begin{align*}
\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{P_{2 r-2}(x)}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{P_{2 r}(x)}\right) & =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{2 r}(x)-P_{2 r-2}(x)}{1+P_{2 r}(x) P_{2 r-2}(x)}\right) .  \tag{2.7}\\
& =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{2 x}{P_{2 r-1}(x)}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

using (1.1) and (1.8) and simplifying.
Consequently, summation of (2.7) produces

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{r=1}^{n} \tan ^{-1}\left(2 x / P_{2 r-1}(x)\right)=\frac{\pi}{2}-\tan ^{-1}\left(1 / P_{2 n}(x)\right) \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $P_{0}(x)=0$ and $\tan x$ is undefined for $x=\pi / 2$.
Alternatively, (2.8) is a direct consequence of (2.4).
As above, the special cases $x=\frac{1}{2}, x=1$ reduce (2.8) to information about the Fibonacci numbers and the Pell numbers, respectively.

In particular, when $x=\frac{1}{2}$, (2.8) leads to the limiting summation

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} \tan ^{-1}\left[\frac{1}{F_{2 r-1}}\right]=\frac{\pi}{2},
$$

## INVERSE TRIGONOMETRICAL SUMMATION FORMULAS INVOLVING PELL POLYNOMIALS

which, like (2.6), is a slight variation of the D. H. Lehmer summation result for Fibonacci numbers (given in [2] as Theorem 5).

When $x=1$ in (2.8), we obtain another form of (2.5) for Pell numbers.
Furthermore, using (1.9) and (1.11), one may obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{Q_{2 r-2}(x)}\right)+\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{Q_{2 r}(x)}\right)=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{4\left(x^{2}+1\right) P_{2 r-1}(x)}{Q_{2 r-1}^{2}(x)+4\left(x^{2}+1\right)-1}\right) \tag{2.7a}
\end{equation*}
$$

Unfortunately, the right-hand side does not simplify any further as we should have desired, by comparison with (2.7). However, if we choose $x=\frac{1}{2}$ [so that $\left.P_{r}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)=F_{r}, Q_{r}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)=L_{r}\right]$, then the equation reduces to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{L_{2 r-2}}\right)+\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{L_{2 r}}\right) & =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{F_{2 r-1}}\right) \\
& =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{F_{2 r-2}}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{F_{2 r}}\right) \text { from (2.7), }
\end{aligned}
$$

both of which are given in [2] (as Theorems 3 and 4), in a slightly varied form.
Proceeding to the limiting summation in the first of these equations (with $r$ replaced by $r+1$ ) produces the result for Lucas numbers given in [2] as Theorem 6, namely

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{L_{2 r}}\right)=\frac{1}{2} \tan ^{-1} 2=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{\sqrt{5}-1}{2}\right)
$$

Furthermore, for Pell-Lucas polynomials,

$$
\begin{align*}
\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{r-1}(x)}{Q_{r}(x)}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{r}(x)}{Q_{r+1}(x)}\right) & =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{r+1}(x) Q_{r-1}(x)-Q_{r}^{2}(x)}{Q_{r}(x)\left(Q_{r+1}(x)+Q_{r-1}(x)\right)}\right)  \tag{2.9}\\
& =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{r-1}}{P_{2 r}(x)}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

by (1.9), (1.11), and (1.12).
Hence,

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum_{r=1}^{n} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{r-1}}{P_{2 r}(x)}\right) & =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{0}(x)}{Q_{1}(x)}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{n}(x)}{Q_{n+1}(x)}\right)  \tag{2.10}\\
& =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{n}(x)}{P_{n+1}(x)}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

by (1.3), (1.4), and (1.5), since $1+x \alpha=\alpha \sqrt{1+x^{2}}$ and $1+x \beta=-\beta \sqrt{1+x^{2}}$.
By (1.5), $\alpha>0$ and $\beta<0$ for all real $x$. Furthermore, $\alpha>1$ for $x>0$ and $0<\alpha<1$ for $x<0$. In addition, $|\beta|<1$ for $x>0$ and $|\beta|>1$ for $x<0$. From these considerations, (1.3), and (2.10), we have

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{r-1}}{P_{2 r}(x)}\right)= \begin{cases}\tan ^{-1}(1 / \alpha), & \text { for } x>0  \tag{2.11}\\ \tan ^{-1}(1 / \beta), & \text { for } x<0\end{cases}
$$

An argument similar to that used in deriving (2.10) shows that

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum_{r=1}^{n} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{r}}{P_{2 r}(x)}\right) & =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{1}(x)}{Q_{0}(x)}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{n+1}(x)}{Q_{n}(x)}\right)  \tag{2.12}\\
& =\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{x Q_{n}(x)-Q_{n+1}(x)}{Q_{n}(x)+x Q_{n+1}(x)}\right)=-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{n}(x)}{P_{n+1}(x)}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Letting $n \rightarrow \infty$, we have another derivation of (2.11). Special manifestations of (2.9), (2.10), (2.11), and (2.12) are derived when $x=\frac{1}{2}$ and $x=1$, yielding information about the Fibonacci and Lucas numbers, and the Pell and Pell-Lucas numbers, respectively.

For example, if $x=\frac{1}{2}$, then (2.11) with (1.5) yields the known result

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} \tan ^{-1}\left\{\frac{(-1)^{r-1}}{F_{2 r}}\right\}=\frac{1}{2} \tan ^{-1} 2=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{\sqrt{5}-1}{2}\right)
$$

which should be compared with the similar result for lucas numbers preceding (2.9).

If $x=\frac{1}{2}$ in (2.9), then, with $r$ replaced by $n+1$, Theorem 3 (first part) of [1] results.

When $x=\frac{1}{2}$ in (2.12), we obtain Theorem 4 of [1].
Following the method used for (2.7), with appeal to (1.8) and (1.10), and then summing, we ascertain that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty}(-1)^{r-1} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{2 r}(x)}{P_{2 r}^{2}(x)}\right)=\frac{\pi}{4}+(-1)^{n-1} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{P_{2 n+1}(x)}\right) \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Summing to infinity gives

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty}(-1)^{r-1} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{2 r}(x)}{P_{2 r}^{2}(x)}\right)=\frac{\pi}{4}, \text { provided } P_{2 n+1}(x) \rightarrow \infty
$$

When $x=\frac{1}{2}$, it follows that, for Fibonacci and Lucas numbers,

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty}(-1)^{r-1} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{L_{2 r}}{F_{2 r}^{2}}\right)=\frac{\pi}{4}
$$

When $x=1$, it follows that, for Pell and Pell-Lucas numbers,

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty}(-1)^{r-1} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{2 r}}{P_{2 r}^{2}}\right)=\frac{\pi}{4}
$$

## 3. GENERALIZATIONS

Results (2.10) and (2.12) can be generalized as indicated below. Firstly, however, some extensions and generalizations of previous formulas must be established. Using the Binet forms (1.3) and (1.4), we may, with due diligence, demonstrate the validity of the following:

$$
\begin{align*}
& P_{(r+1)(2 k-1)}(x) P_{(r-1)(2 k-1)}(x)-P_{r(2 k-1)}^{2}(x)=(-1)^{r(2 k-1)} P_{2 k-1}^{2}(x) ;  \tag{3.1}\\
& \begin{aligned}
Q_{(r+1)(2 k-1)}(x) Q_{(r-1)(2 k-1)}(x) & -Q_{r(2 k-1)}^{2}(x) \\
& =(-1)^{(r-1)(2 k-1)} 4\left(x^{2}+1\right) P_{2 k-1}^{2}(x) ; \\
P_{r(2 k-1)}(x)\left\{P_{(r+1)(2 k-1)}(x)\right. & \left.+P_{(r-1)(2 k-1)}(x)\right\}=P_{2 r(2 k-1)}(x) P_{2 k-1}(x) ; \\
Q_{r(2 k-1)}(x)\left\{Q_{(r+1)(2 k-1)}(x)\right. & \left.+Q_{(r-1)(2 k-1)}(x)\right\} \\
& =4\left(x^{2}+1\right) P_{2 r(2 k-1)}(x) P_{2 k-1}(x)
\end{aligned}
\end{align*}
$$

The odd factor $2 k-1$ is necessary to ensure the vanishing of certain terms that arise in the course of the algebraic manipulations. Of course, (3.1) and (3.2) are extensions of the Simson's formulas (1.8) and (1.9), respectively, when $k=1\left(P_{1}(x)=1\right)$.

Now, consider

$$
\begin{align*}
& \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{(r-1)(2 k-1)}(x)}{Q_{r(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{r(2 k-1)}(x)}{Q_{(r+1)(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)  \tag{3.5}\\
& \quad=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{(r+1)(2 k-1)}(x) Q_{(r-1)(2 k-1)}(x)-Q_{r(2 k-1)}^{2}(x)}{Q_{r(2 k-1)}(x)\left\{Q_{(r+1)(2 k-1)}(x)+Q_{(r-1)(2 k-1)}(x)\right\}}\right) \\
& \quad=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{(r-1)(2 k-1)} \cdot 4\left(x^{2}+1\right) P_{2 k-1}^{2}(x)}{4\left(x^{2}+1\right) P_{2 r(2 k-1)}(x) P_{2 k-1}(x)}\right) \text { by (3.2), } \\
& \quad=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{(r-1)(2 k-1)} P_{2 k-1}(x)}{P_{2 r(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Put $k=1$ in (3.5) and we obtain (2.9).
If we sum (3.5), as before, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{r=1}^{n} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{(r-1)(2 k-1)} P_{2 k-1}(x)}{P_{2 r(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)  \tag{3.6}\\
& \quad=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{0}(x)}{Q_{2 k-1}(x)}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{Q_{n(2 k-1)}(x)}{Q_{(n+1)(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Recourse to (3.1) and (3.3) will 1ikewise reveal that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{r(2 k-1)} P_{2 k-1}(x)}{P_{2 r(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)  \tag{3.7}\\
& \quad=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{(r-1)(2 k-1)}(x)}{P_{r(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{r(2 k-1)}(x)}{P_{(r+1)(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore, since $P_{0}(x)=0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{r=1}^{n} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{r(2 k-1)} P_{2 k-1}(x)}{P_{2 r(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)=-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{n(2 k-1)}(x)}{P_{(n+1)(2 k-1)^{(x)}}}\right) \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

1985]

INVERSE TRIGONOMETRICAL SUMMATION FORMULAS INVOLVING PELL POLYNOMIALS

Putting $k=1$ in (3.6) and (3.8) leads us back to (2.10) and (2.12), respectively. Some advantage accrues in (3.7) if $r$ is replaced by $r+1$. Summation then leaves an additional (nonvanishing) term

$$
\left[=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{2 k-1}(x)}{P_{2(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)\right]
$$

on the right-hand side. If we put $k=1$ in (3.7) and replace $r$ by $r+1$, then $x=1$ gives us

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{r}}{P_{r+1}}\right)-\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{P_{r+1}}{P_{r+2}}\right)=\tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{r+1}}{P_{2 r+2}}\right) \tag{3.7a}
\end{equation*}
$$

while $x=\frac{1}{2}$ gives Theorem 3 (second part) in [1].
In conclusion, we notice, using the results needed for (2.11), that

$$
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} \tan ^{-1}\left(\frac{(-1)^{r(2 k-1)} P_{2 k-1}(x)}{P_{2 r(2 k-1)}(x)}\right)=- \begin{cases}\tan ^{-1}\left(1 / \alpha^{2 k-1}\right), & \text { for } x>0  \tag{3.9}\\ \tan ^{-1}\left(1 / \beta^{2 k-1}\right), & \text { for } x<0\end{cases}
$$

## 4. ACKNOWLEDGMENT

We wish to express our appreciation for the comments of the referee, which have improved the quality and presentation of this paper.

## REFERENCES

1. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& I. D. Ruggles. "A Primer for the Fibonacci NumbersPart IV." The Fibonacci Quarterly 1, no. 4 (1963):65-71.
2. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& I. D. Ruggles. "A Primer for the Fibonacci NumbersPart V." The Fibonacci Quarterly 2, no. 1 (1964):59-65.
3. A. F. Horadam \& Bro. J. M. Mahon. "Pe11 and Pell-Lucas Polynomials." The Fibonacci Quarterly 23, no. 1 (1985):17-20.

# A TWO-DIMENSIONAL GENERALIZATION OF GRUNDY'S GAME 

GEORG SCHRAGE
University of Dortmund, D-4600 Dortmund, West Germany
(Submitted December 1983)

## 1. INTRODUCTION

A positional game with normal winning rule for two alternately moving persons may be defined by a pair $\Gamma=(P, S) . P$ is the finite set of game positions and $S$ is a mapping $S: P \rightarrow 2^{P}$ such that $y \in S(x)$ if and only if $y$ is a position that can be brought about from position $x$ by a legal move. We call $S(x)$ the set of successors of $x$. A play of $\Gamma$ terminates when a position $x$ with $S(x)=\emptyset$ has been reached. The normal winning rule states that the player loses who is first unable to move. It is assumed that there is an upper bound for the number of moves in any play. A disjunctive combination of a finite set of such games $\Gamma_{1}, \Gamma_{2}, \ldots, \Gamma_{k}$ may be defined thus: The players play alternately, each in turn making a move in one of the individual games. A player loses if unable to move.
P. M. Grundy [1] showed that for $\Gamma=(P, S)$ the function $G: P \rightarrow \mathbb{N}_{0}$ with

$$
G(x)= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } S(x)=\emptyset  \tag{*}\\ \min \left(\mathbb{N}_{0} \backslash\{G(y) \mid y \in S(x)\}\right) & \text { if } S(x) \neq \emptyset\end{cases}
$$

has the properties
P1: A player who moves from a position $x$ with $G(x)>0$ can consistently move to a positive the $G$-value of which is 0 and so win the play.
P2: If $\Gamma$ is a disjunctive combination of games $\Gamma_{1}, \Gamma_{2}, \ldots, \Gamma_{k}$, then for a combined position $x=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{k}\right)$ the $G$-value is the nim-sum of the individual $G$-values, i.e.,
$G(x)=G\left(x_{1}\right) \stackrel{*}{+} G\left(x_{2}\right) \stackrel{*}{+} \cdots \stackrel{*}{+} G\left(x_{k}\right)$, where the nim-sum $a \stackrel{*}{+} b$ for $a, b \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ is defined by
$a \stackrel{*}{+} b=\left\{\begin{array}{l}0 \text { if } a=b=0, \\ (a+b) \bmod 2+2(a \operatorname{div} 2 \stackrel{*}{+} b \operatorname{div} 2) \text { otherwise, }\end{array}\right.$ where $a$ div 2 is the integer division of $a$ by 2 .

So the $G$-value of $x=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{k}\right)$ can easily be calculated if $G\left(x_{i}\right)$ is known for $i=1,2, \ldots, k$.

## 2. GRUNDY'S GAME

P. M. Grundy himself invented the following game: The starting position is a single heap of $K$ matches. The first player, by his move, divides this heap into two heaps of unequal size. the second player selects one of the heaps and

## A TWO-DIMENSIONAL GENERALIZATION OF GRUNDY'S GAME

divides it into two heaps of unequal size, and so forth. The play terminates when each individual heap contains only one or two matches. The second player makes the first move in a game that is the disjunctive combination of the two Grundy-games determined by the two heaps resulting from the first player's move. If the starting position of a Grundy-game is described by the number $K$ of corresponding matches, we get

$$
S(K)=\{(I, K-I) \mid 0<I<K \text { and } I \neq K-I\} .
$$

The $G$-value of $K$ according to the recursive definition (*) taking into consideration $P 2$ is determined by

$$
G(K)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0 \quad \text { if } K=1 \text { or } K=2, \\
\min \left(\mathbb{N}_{0} \backslash\{G(I) \stackrel{*}{+} G(K-I) \mid 0<I<K, I \neq K-I\}\right) \text { otherwise. }
\end{array}\right.
$$

For $K \leqslant 100$, the following $G$-values are obtained:
Table 1

| $K$ | $G(K)$ |  |  |  |
| :---: | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $1-40$ | 0010210210 | 2132132430 | 4304304123 | 1241241241 |
| $41-80$ | 5415415410 | 2102152132 | 1324324324 | 3243243245 |
| $81-100$ | 2452437437 | 4374352352 |  |  |

(See, also [4].)

## 3. THE GENERALIZED GRUNDY-GAME

A play in this game starts with an $(M \times N)$-rectangle. The first player breaks this rectangle into two rectangles of unequal size, to that the sides of the resulting rectangles are of integer length. (Imagine a bar of chocolate that can be broken along vertical and horizontal scores.) The second player breaks one of these rectangles into two new rectangles of unequal size, and so on. The play terminates when both sides of each individual rectangle are less than or equal to 2 . According to the normal winning rule, it is lost by the person who is first unable to move.
$G(M, N)$ denotes the $G$-value corresponding to a single ( $M \times N$ )-rectangle, while $G(K)$ refers to a position in Grundy's original game. The following properties are obvious:

Q1: $G(M, N)=G(N, M)$, and
Q2: $G(1, N)=G(2, N)=G(N)$.
(The generalized game starting with a $(1 \times N)$-rectangle or a $(2 \times N)$-rectangle is obviously equivalent to the original Grundy-game starting with $N$ matches.)

The set of positions succeeding to ( $M, N$ ) is:

$$
S(M, N)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\emptyset \quad \text { if } M \leqslant 2 \text { and } N \leqslant 2 \\
\{((m, N),(M-m, N)) \mid 0<m<M \text { and } m \neq M-m\} \\
\cup\{((M, n),(M, N-n)) \mid 0<n<N \text { and } n \neq N-n\} \text { otherwise } .
\end{array}\right.
$$

So $G(M, N)$ can be calculated according to:

$$
G(M, N)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0 \text { if } M \leqslant 2 \text { and } N \leqslant 2, \\
\min (\mathbb{N} \backslash(\{G(m, N) \stackrel{\star}{+} G(M-m, N) \mid 0<m<M, m \neq M-m\} \\
\cup\{G(M, n) \stackrel{\star}{+} G(M, N-n) \mid 0<n<N, n \neq N-n\})) \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

resulting in Table 2:
Table 2

| $M$ | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 | 10 | 11 | 12 | 13 | 14 | 15 | 16 | 17 | 18 | 19 | 20 | $\ldots$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 3 | 0 |  |
| 2 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 2 | 0 |  |
| 3 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |  |
| 4 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 3 | 0 |  |
| 5 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 2 |  |
| 6 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |  |
| 7 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 3 | 0 |  |
| 8 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 2 |  |
| 9 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |  |
| 10 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 3 | 0 |  |
| 11 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 2 |  |
| 12 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |  |
| 13 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 3 |  |
| 14 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 2 |  |
| 15 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |  |
| 16 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 3 |  |
| 17 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 2 |  |
| 18 | 4 | 4 | 1 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 4 |  |
| 19 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 3 |  |
| 20 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 3 | 0 |  |
| $:$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |

This table indicates that $G(M, N)$ is completely determined by the values $G(M)$ and $G(N)$, as the following theorem states.

Theorem:

$$
G(M, N)=\left\{\begin{array}{cl}
G(N) & \text { if } G(M)=0 \\
G(M) & \text { if } G(N)=0, \\
1 & \text { if } G(M)>0 \text { and } G(N)>0,
\end{array}\right.
$$

for all $M, N \in \mathbb{N}$.
Proof (Induction on $M+N$ ):

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M+N=2: G(1,1)=0=G(1) \\
& M+N=3: G(1,2)=G(2,1)=0=G(1)=G(2) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now assume that there is an ( $I \times K$ )-rectangle such that $I+K=n+1$, where $n \geqslant 2$, and that the theorem is true for all $(M \times N)$-rectangles with $M+N \leqslant n$.

Under this assumption, we must prove the following:

1. $G(I)=0 \Rightarrow G(I, K)=G(K)$,
2. $G(K)=0 \Rightarrow G(I, K)=G(I)$, and
3. $G(I)>0$ and $G(K)>0 \Rightarrow G(I, K)=1$.
4. $G(I)=0 \Rightarrow \min \left(\mathbb{N}_{0} \backslash\{G(I, k) \stackrel{*}{+} G(I, K-k) \mid 0<k<K, k \neq K-k\}\right)$
$=\min \left(\mathbb{N}_{0} \backslash\{G(k) \stackrel{*}{+} G(K-k) \mid 0<k<K, k \neq K-k\}\right)=G(K)$.
It remains to prove that
$G(K) \notin\{G(i, K) \stackrel{\star}{+} G(I-i, K) \mid 0<i<I, i \neq I-i\}$.
It is either $G(K)=0$ or $G(K)>0$. These two cases will be inspected separately.
(i) $G(K)=0$ :
$\min \left(\mathbb{N}_{0} \backslash\{G(i, K) \stackrel{*}{+} G(I-i, K) \mid 0<i<I, i \neq I-i\}\right)=$
$\min \left(\mathbb{N}_{0} \backslash\{G(i) \stackrel{\star}{+} G(I-i) \mid 0<i<I, i \neq I-i\}\right)=G(I)=0$.
Since $G(K)=0$, it is
$G(K) \notin\{G(i, K) \stackrel{\star}{+} G(I-i, K) \mid 0<i<I, i \neq I-i\}$.
(ii) $G(K)>0$ :
$\{G(i, K) \mid 0<i<I\} \subset\{1, G(K)\}$ as $i+K \leqslant n$.
Because of $1 \stackrel{\star}{+} 1=0$,
$G(K) \stackrel{*}{+} G(K)=0$, and
$1 \stackrel{*}{+} G(K)= \begin{cases}G(K)+1 & \text { if } G(K) \\ \text { is even, } \\ G(K)-1 & \text { if } G(K) \text { is odd, }\end{cases}$
yields $G(i, K) \stackrel{*}{+} G(I-i, K) \neq G(K)$ for $0<i<I$, and therefore $G(K) \notin\{G(K, I) \stackrel{*}{+} G(I-i, K) \mid 0<i<I, i \neq I-i\}$.
5. $G(K)=0 \Rightarrow G(K, I)=G(I)$, as was just proved, and $G(K, I)=G(I, K)$.
6. $G(I)>0$ and $G(K)>0$ :

In this case, $I>2$ and $K>2$.
$G(I, K)=1$ is equivalent to:
(i) $G(i, K) \stackrel{*}{+} G(I-i, K) \neq 1$ for all $i$ such that $0<i<I$ and $i \neq I-i$;
(ii) $G(I, k) \stackrel{*}{+} G(I, K-k) \neq 1$ for all $k$ such that $0<k<K$ and $k \neq K-k$;
(iii) $G(i, K) \stackrel{\star}{+} G(I-i, K)=0$ for some $i$ such that $0<i<I$ and $i \neq I-i$
or
$G(I, k) \stackrel{*}{+} G(I, K-k)=0$ for some $k$ such that $0<k<k$ and $k \neq K-k$.
To prove (i), (ii), and (iii) of 3:
(i) By assumption, $G(i, K) \in\{1, G(K)\}$ for $0<i<I$. So we have $G(i, K) \stackrel{*}{+} G(I-i, K)=\left\{\begin{aligned} & 1 \stackrel{*}{+} 1=0 \text { or } \\ & G(K) \stackrel{*}{+} G(K)=0 \\ & 1 \stackrel{*}{+} G(K) \neq 1\end{aligned} \quad\right.$ or
for all $i, 0<i<I$.

```
(ii) \(G(I, k)+G(I, K-k)=G(k, I) \stackrel{*}{+} G(K-k, I) \neq 1\) for all \(k\),
    \(0<k<K\), because of (i).
(iii) Suppose \(G(i, K) \stackrel{\star}{+} G(I-i, K) \neq 0\) for a certain \(i, 0<i<I\) and \(i \neq I-i\). This is equivalent to \(G(i, K) \neq G(I-i, K)\). Since, by assumption, \(G(i, K)\) is determined by \(G(i)\) and \(G(K)\), it follows that \(G(i) \neq G(I-i)\) for this \(i\).
However, there must exist an \(i, 0<i<I\) and \(i \neq I-i\) such that \(G(i)=G(I-i)\) because otherwise \(G(i) \stackrel{\star}{+} G(I-i) \neq 0\) for all \(i\), \(0<i<I\) and \(i \neq I-i\). That would mean \(G(I)=0\), in contradiction to the assumption \(G(I)>0\).
```


## 4. FURTHER GENERALIZATIONS

The theorem can be extended in different directions:

1. Consider the game in which a heap of $K$ matches may be split into two nonempty heaps of size $I$ and $K-I$ provided $|K-I| \geqslant d, d \in N_{0}$. (For $d=1$, it is Grundy's original game.)
For this game and its two-dimensional analogue, the above theorem remains valid. The proof requires only replacing the conditions $i \neq I-i$ and $k \neq K-k$ by $|I-i| \geqslant d$ and $|K-k| \geqslant d$.
2. The theorem can be generalized to more than two dimensions. For example:
$G(L, M, N)= \begin{cases}G(M, N) & \text { if } G(L)=0, \\ 1 & \text { if } G(L)>0, G(M)>0, G(N)>0 .\end{cases}$
The proof is completely analogous to the one given above.
The author is grateful to the referee for these suggestions.

## REFERENCES

1. P. M. Grundy. "Mathematics and Games." Eureka 2 (1939):6-8.
2. R. K. Guy \& C. A. B. Smith. "The G-Values of Various Games." Proc. Cambridge Phizos. Soc. 52 (1956):514-526.
3. J. H. Conway. On Numbers and Games. London, 1976.
4. E. R. Berlekamp, J. H. Conway, \& R. K. Guy. Winning Ways, Vol. I. London, 1982.

# LUCAS SEQUENCES IN SUBGRAPH COUNTS OF SERIES-PARALLEL AND RELATED GRAPHS 

ERIC M. NEUFELD
University of Saskatchewan, Saskatoon, Saskatchewan, S7N OWO, Canada
CHARLES J. COLBOURN
University of Waterloo, Waterloo, Ontario, N2L 3G1, Canada
(Submitted January 1984)

## 1. INTRODUCTION

We follow graph theoretic terminology as in [B\&M]. Let $G=(V, E)$ denote a graph where $V$ is a set of vertices and $E$ is a set of nonoriented edges. Though we do not in general consider graphs with loops or multiple edges, we make reference to such graphs for the purpose of proofs. When an edge $e$ appears $m$ times, we say $e$ has multiplicity $m$. A subgraph $G^{\prime}=\left(V^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)$ of $G$ is any graph such that $V^{\prime} \subseteq V$ and $E^{\prime} \subseteq E$, and a spanning subgraph of $G$ contains every vertex of $V$. A sequence of vertices $n_{1}, n_{2}, n_{3}, \ldots, n_{k}$ is a path of $G$ if $n_{i} \in V$, $\left\{n_{i}, n_{i+1}\right\} \in E$, for all $i$, and no vertices are repeated. A path is a cycle if $n_{1}=n_{k}$. A tree of $G$ is a subgraph with no cycles; a spanning tree contains every vertex of $G$. Let $r(G)$ denote the count of spanning trees of $G$.

Spanning tree counts of general graphs can be obtained in $O\left(n^{3}\right)$ time by computing the determinant of its in-degree matrix [7], where $n$ is the number of vertices. This function grows quickly; as well, the practical interest of circuit theory in counting spanning trees motivates the study of classes of graphs for which spanning tree counts can be obtained in linear time.

Sedlacek [19] notes that $W_{n+1}$, the wheel on $n+1$ vertices, is obtained from a cycle on $n$ points we call the rim by joining each point in the cycle to another point we call the hub. Vertices and edges on the rim are rim vertices and rim edges; an edge joining a rim vertex and the hub is a spoke. Sedlacek considers $F_{n+1}$, the auxiliary fan of $W_{n+1}$, derived from $W_{n+1}$ by removing a single rim edge and proves

$$
r\left(F_{n+1}\right)=\frac{(3+\sqrt{5})^{n+1}-(3-\sqrt{5})^{n+1}}{2^{n+1} \sqrt{5}}
$$

and

$$
r\left(W_{n+1}\right)=\left(\frac{3+\sqrt{5}}{2}\right)^{n+1}+\left(\frac{3-\sqrt{5}}{2}\right)^{n+1}-2 .
$$

It is remarkable that $r\left(F_{n+1}\right)$ generates every second number of the Fibonacci series.

Myers [14] and Bedrosian [2] derive similar formulas for wheels and multigraph wheels in a circuit theory setting. Hilton [10] presents formulas for $r(G)$ of fans and wheels in terms of Fibonacci and Lucas numbers, and Fielder [8] provides tree counts for sector graphs, fans with certain multiple edges. Slater [21] shows that all maximal outerplane graphs with exactly two vertices of degree two have the same spanning tree count as fans. (We coin the term generalized fan to refer to these graphs in [16] and [17].) Shannon [20] derives $r\left(W_{n+1}\right)$ with a number theoretic approach. Bange, Barkauskas, and Slater
[1] show that generalized fans have more spanning trees than any other maximal outerplane graph. Most of these studies have been motivated by the remarkable involvement of Fibonacci numbers in spanning tree counts.

The study of network reliability demands counts of subgraphs other than spanning trees. Previously, formulas for subgraph counts apparently existed only for complete graphs [9]. A network is commonly modeled as a probabilistic graph where each edge $e$ fails independently with probability $p$ and vertices never fail. The probability that such a graph is connected is called probabilistic connectedness, and is a standard measure of network reliability. This can be generalized in two different ways. In some applications, a network may not be considered operational unless it has edge connectivity or cohesion of at least $k$; this we call $k$-cohesive connectedness. Alternately, a network may be considered operational if it has broken down into no more than $k$ components; we call this $k$-component connectedness. In Section 2, we use Lucas recurrences to count various types of subgraphs of generalized fans and related graphs. Section 3 counts connected spanning subgraphs with cohesion of at least two (two-cohesive). Section 4 presents the rank polynomial as a technique for classifying subgraphs of generalized fans both by number of edges and by number of components. We conclude in Section 5 with some applications. By noting that probabilities can be encoded in the coefficients of some of these recurrences, we obtain reliability formulas as well as subgraph counting formulas. As in previous studies, we find that the required enumerations are given in two-term recurrence relations; hence, the desired subgraph counts are Lucas numbers.

## 2. COUNTING CONNECTED SPANNING SUBGRAPHS

We begin by counting connected spanning subgraphs of generalized fans that satisfy a Lucas recurrence. Generalized fans are a subset of 2-trees [18], defined recursively as follows:

1) A single edge is a 2-tree.
2) If $G$ is a 2-tree with edge $\{x, y\}$, adding a new vertex $z$, and the two edges $\{x, z\}$ and $\{y, z\}$ creates a new 2 -tree. If $G$ is not a single edge, $\{x, y\}$ becomes an interior edge of the new graph.
When parallel edges are not allowed, 2-trees are equivalent to maximal series-parallel networks as in [6], [16], [17]; other definitions of seriesparallel networks do appear in the literature.

Any vertex of degree two is a peripheral vertex; an edge incident on a peripheral vertex is a peripheral edge. To illustrate the counting technique, we reproduce in part this lemma from [16] which counts connected spanning subgraphs of generalized fans.

Lemma 2.1: The number of connected spanning subgraphs of an $n$-vertex generalized fan, $s c(n)$, satisfies the recurrence:

$$
s c(n)=4 s c(n-1)-2 s c(n-2)
$$

Proof: Let peripheral vertex $z$ be attached to edge $\{x, y\}$ of generalized fan $G$ by edges $\{x, z\}$ and $\{y, z\}$. A connected spanning subgraph of $G$ induces on $G-z$ either a connected spanning subgraph or a disconnected spanning subgraph which the addition of $\{x, y\}$ would connect. To handle this latter case, we define $d c(n)$ to be the number of spanning subgraphs of an $n$-vertex generalized fan which the addition of a specific peripheral edge would connect.

Any connected spanning subgraph of $G$ must contain at least one of $\{x, z\}$ and $\{y, z\}$. If both are selected, the graph induced on $G-z$ must either be connected, or be one of the graphs counted by $d c$. In this case, there are $s c(n-1)+d c(n-1)$ induced subgraphs. Otherwise, a connected spanning subgraph contains either $\{x, z\}$ or $\{x, z\}$, but not both. But then the graph induced on $G-z$ must be connected; the number in this case is $2 s c(n-1)$. Therefore,

$$
s c(n)=3 s c(n-1)+d c(n-1)
$$

By a similar argument,

$$
d c(n)=s c(n-1)+d c(n-1) .
$$

These two recurrences may be combined to yield

$$
s c(n)=4 s c(n-1)-2 s c(n-2) .
$$

Since $s c(2)=1$ and $s c(3)=4$, the recurrence yields the closed formula

$$
\operatorname{sc}(n)=\frac{(2+\sqrt{2})^{n-1}-(2-\sqrt{2})^{n-1}}{2 \sqrt{2}} .
$$

From a reliability perspective, it is interesting that all generalized fans have the same number of connected spanning subgraphs; in addition, generalized fans have more connected spanning subgraphs than any other 2-tree [16]. We say $F_{i}$ is a subfan of the fan $F_{n}$ if $h$, the hub of $F_{n}$, is a vertex in $F_{i}, F_{i}$ is a subgraph of $F_{n}$ and $F_{i}$ is a fan. From Lemma 2.1, we then show:

Lemma 2.2: For $n \geqslant 4$, the number of connected spanning subgraphs of a wheel on $n$ vertices, $s c_{W}(n)$, is

$$
s c_{W}(n)=2 \sum_{i=2}^{n} s c(i) .
$$

Proof: Consider the $n$-vertex wheel $W_{n}$ with rim edge $\{a, b\}$. Denote by $F_{n}$ the auxiliary fan of $W_{n}$ created by removing $\{a, b\}$.

A connected spanning subgraph of $W$ may or may not contain $\{a, b\}$. If not, there are $s c(n)$ connected spanning subgraphs of the auxiliary fan of $W_{n}$ which are also connected spanning subgraphs of $W_{n}$. But we can also add the edge $\{a, b\}$ to any of the connected spanning subgraphs of $F_{n}$ and get a connected spanning subgraph of $W_{n}$.

Lastly, the edge $\{a, b\}$ connects any two-component spanning subgraph of $F_{n}$, one containing $a$ and the other containing $b$. Such a spanning subgraph of $F_{n}$ must consist of a path on $n-i$ vertices and a connected spanning subgraph of the subfan of $F_{n}$ on the remaining $i$ vertices.

For each $i$, there are exactly two ways we can choose a path on $n-i$ vertices containing exactly one of $\alpha$ or $b$, and $s c(i)$ ways of obtaining a connected spanning subgraph on the remaining $i$ vertices; hence, for each $i$ we obtain $2 s c(i)$ connected spanning subgraphs of $W_{n}$. We vary $i$ from 2 to $n-1$, and the result follows.

The above simplifies to:

$$
s c_{W}(n)=(2+\sqrt{2})^{n-1}+(2-\sqrt{2})^{n-1}-2 .
$$

This is analogous to Sedlacek's formula for spanning trees in a wheel.

## 3. COUNTING 2-COHESIVE SPANNING SUBGRAPHS

Sometimes a network must be at least $k$-cohesive, i.e., the order of the minimum edge cutset must be at least $k$, to be operational. This happens in an environoment where queuing delay is a problem [26]. The number of 2-cohesive spanning subgraphs of generalized fans satisfies a recurrence of the Lucas type [15]. We state the following without proof.

Lemma 3.1: For $n \geqslant 3, s c_{2}(n)$, the number of 2 -cohesive spanning subgraphs of an $n$-vertex generalized fan is

$$
\begin{aligned}
s c_{2}(n)=d c_{2}(n) & =2 s c_{2}(n-1)+s c_{2}(n-2) \\
& =\frac{\sqrt{2}}{4}\left[(1+\sqrt{2})^{n-2}-(1-\sqrt{2})^{n-2}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

As before, the count of two-connected spanning subgraphs is maximized by minimizing the number of peripheral vertices.

## 4. THE RANK POLYNOMIAL OF A GENERALIZED FAN

Subgraph counts have been studied in an algebraic setting by Tutte [22], [23], [24], and [25] and others [3] and [5]. In this section, we derive the rank polynomial of a generalized fan, by a similar technique.

Let $c(G)$ denote the number of components of a graph $G$. In addition, write

$$
i(G)=|V|-c(G), \quad j(G)=|E|-|V|+c(G)
$$

If $S$ is any subset of $E, G: S$ denotes the subgraph of $G$ induced by $S$. Then denote by $R K(G ; t, z)$ the rank polynomial of $G$ where

$$
R K(G ; t, z)=\sum_{S \subseteq E} t^{i(G: S)} z^{j(G: S)}
$$

Note that $i(G: S)+j(G: S)=|S|$; thus, from the rank polynomial of a graph, we can quickly classify spanning subgraphs of $G$ not only by number of edges but also by number of components. From [24], we can trivially derive the following three properties of the rank polynomial which completely characterize $R K(G ; t, z):$

1) If $G$ consists of two vertex disjoint subgraphs $H$ and $K$, then

$$
R K(G ; t, z)=R K(H ; t, z) R K(K ; t, z)
$$

2) (Rank polynomial factoring theorem). If $e$ is any edge in $E$,

$$
R K(G ; t, z)=R K(G=e ; t, z)+t R K(G e e ; t, z)
$$

where $G$ is graph $G$ less edge $e=\{x, y\}$ with endvertices $x$ and $y$ identified.
3) If $G$ consists of a single vertex and $k$ loops,

$$
R K(G ; t, z)=(1+z)^{k}
$$

Thus, the rank polynomial is a rich source of information about subgraph counts. We need some more identities:

Lemma 4.1: (a) If $G$ is a single edge on two vertices, then

$$
R K(G ; t, z)=1+t .
$$

(b) If $G_{x}$ is the graph derived by adding a loop to any vertex $x$ of $G$, then

$$
R K\left(G_{x} ; t, z\right)=(1+z) R K(G ; t, z)
$$

(c) If $G=H \cup K$ and $H \cap K$ contains no edges and exactly one vertex,

$$
R K(G ; t, z)=R K(H ; t, z) R K(K ; t, z) .
$$

Proof: (a) Note that if $H$ is any edgeless graph, then $R K(H ; t, z)=1$. A single application of the rank polynomial factoring theorem yields the result.
(b) Any spanning subgraph of $G$ is a spanning subgraph of $G_{x}$; to each spanning subgraph of $G$, we can add the edge $\{x, x\}$ also yielding another spanning subgraph of $G_{x}$. This second set of spanning subgraphs can be represented by multiplying the rank polynomial of $G$ by $z$, i.e., increasing the edge count of every term in the polynomial without disturbing any other information.
(c) Consider any subgraphs $H^{\prime}$ and $K^{\prime}$ of $H$ and $K$, respectively. $H^{\prime}$ has $n_{H}$ vertices, $e_{H}$ edges, and $c_{H}$ components. Similarly, $K^{\prime}$ has $n_{K}$ vertices, $e_{K}$ edges, and $c_{K}$ components. The subgraph $H^{\prime} \cup K^{\prime}$ of $G$ has $n_{H}+n_{K}-1$ vertices, $e_{H}+e_{K}$ edges, and $c_{H}+c_{K}-1$ components. Expressing the term of $R K(G ; t, z)$ corresponding to $H^{\prime} \cup K^{\prime}$ in terms of the corresponding expressions for $H^{\prime}$ and $K^{\prime}$ in $R K(H ; t, z)$ and $R K(K ; t, z)$ yields the desired result.

We have seen that every generalized fan on $n$ vertices, regardless of topology, has the same number of connected spanning subgraphs. Nevertheless, it is surprising that all $n$-vertex generalized fans have the same rank polynomial, again satisfying a two-term linear Lucas recurrence.

Lemma 4.2: The rank polynomial of any generalized fan on $n$ vertices, $S(n)$, satisfies the recurrence

$$
S(n)=(1+3 t+t z) S(n-1)-t(1+t)(1+z) S(n-2)
$$

which may be solved for the closed formula

$$
\begin{aligned}
S(n)= & \frac{1+2 t+3 t^{2}+t^{2} z-t z+(1+t) \alpha}{2 \alpha}\left(\frac{1+3 t+t z+\alpha}{2}\right)^{n-2} \\
& -\frac{1+2 t+3 t^{2}+t^{2} z-t z-(1+t) \alpha}{2 \alpha}\left(\frac{1+3 t+t z-\alpha}{2}\right)^{n-2}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\alpha=\sqrt{(1+3 t+t z)^{2}+4 t(1+t)(1+z)}$.
Proof: As preliminaries, consider some special cases. Let $H_{n}=G_{n-1} \cup\{x, y\}$, be an $n$-vertex graph where $G_{n-1}$ is an $n$-1-vertex generalized fan with peripheral vertex $x$ and $y$ is a new vertex not in $G_{n-1}$; then,

$$
R K\left(H_{n} ; t, z\right)=(1+t) S(n-1)
$$

by Lemma 4.1(a) and (c). Let $G$ be an $n$-vertex generalized fan and write $D D(n)$
for the rank polynomial of an $n$-vertex generalized fan with one peripheral edge of multiplicity 2. A single application of the rank polynomial factoring theorem to one of $G^{\prime}$ s peripheral edges yields

$$
S(n)=R K\left(H_{n} ; t, z\right)+D D(n-1)=(1+t) S(n-1)+D D(n-1)
$$

We obtain a recursive expression for $D D(n)$ by applying the rank polynomial factoring theorem to one of the edges of multiplicity 2 . If $G$ is an $n$-vertex generalized fan with one peripheral edge $e$ of multiplicity 2 , then $G-e$ is an $n$-vertex generalized fan and $G e$ is an $n$ - l-vertex generalized fan with a peripheral edge of multiplicity 2 and a loop at the peripheral vertex. Then

$$
D D(n)=S(n)+t(1+z) D D(n-1)
$$

by Lemma 4.1(b).
Combining these expressions provides the stated two-term Lucas recurrence, and solving gives the closed formula.

## 5. APPLICATIONS

Subgraph counts alone provide a measure of the connectedness of a graph. However, the recurrences in Section 2 can be generalized to compute probabilistic connectedness or, alternately, two-cohesive connectedness. If $p$ is the probability that a single edge is up, then $R_{p}(n)$ is the probability that an $n$ vertex generalized fan is connected. Let $\rho_{p}(n)$ be the probability of obtaining a spanning subgraph on $n$ vertices that would become connected if a specific peripheral edge were added. Since the context is clear, we omit the probability subscript. The following is a new proof of the main result in [17] using Lucas recurrences rather than generating functions.

Theorem 5.1: Let $x=q / p . \quad R(n)$, the probability that an $n$-vertex generalized fan is connected is given by:

$$
R(n)=p^{2}(3 x+1) R(n-1)-p^{4}\left(x^{2}+x\right) R(n-2)
$$

It is remarkable that $\rho(n)$ also obeys the same relation, that is:

$$
\rho(n)=p^{2}(3 x+1) \rho(n-1)-p^{4}\left(x^{2}+x\right) \rho(n-2)
$$

Proof: Consider the $n$-vertex generalized fan $G$ having peripheral vertex $z$ and edge of attachment $\{x, y\}$. We measure $R(n)$ as a product of the states of edges $\{x, z\}$, $\{y, z\}$ and the subgraph induced by $G-z$. The probability that $G-z$ is connected is $R(n-1)$; the probability that at least one of $\{x, z\}$ and $\{y, z\}$ is up is $2 p q+p^{2}$. The probability of a connected spanning subgraph in this case is $R(n-1)\left(2 p q+p^{2}\right)$. Suppose, on the other hand, $G-z$ is disconnected but the addition of $\{x, y\}$ would connect it; if both $\{x, z\}$ and $\{y, z\}$ are up, the resultant subgraph of $G$ is connected with probability $p^{2} \rho(n-1)$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \quad R(n)=p^{2} \rho(n-1)+\left(2 p q+p^{2}\right) R(n-1) \\
& \text { Similarly, } \\
& \rho(n)=p q \rho(n-1)+q^{2} R(n-1)
\end{aligned}
$$

Combining these formulas yields the stated recurrences which can then be solved for a closed formula for probabilistic connectedness.

Such formulas are extremely useful, since it appears that no other exact measures of probabilistic connectedness exist except for complete graphs [9].

LUCAS SEQUENCES IN SUBGRAPH COUNTS OF SERIES-PARALLEL AND RELATED GRAPHS

A formula for 2 -cohesive connectedness can be derived similarly; in both instances, generalized fans are the most reliable maximal series-parallel network (see [15] and [17]).

The rank polynomial of a generalized fan yields a family of reliability measures. Let $t=z / r$ and $z=p / q$, and let $K C(n, k)$ be the probability of obtaining a subgraph of no more than $k$ components. We multiply the rank polynomial by $p^{|V|} q^{2 n-3}$ and collect terms by superscripts of $z$ to yield

$$
q^{2 n-3} \sum_{d} c_{d} r^{|V|-i}\left(\frac{p}{q}\right) i^{i+j}
$$

From this, we can write

$$
K C(n, k)=q^{2 n-3} \sum_{d} c_{d} T(|V|-i \leqslant k)\left(\frac{p}{q}\right)^{i+j},
$$

where $T$ (expression) returns 1 if its argument is true and 0 otherwise.
Lastly, these techniques apply to other classes of graphs. Generalizing Sedlacek [19], Mikola [13] describes $V_{n}^{(k)}$ as the path $v_{0} v_{1} v_{2} \cdots v_{(n-1)(k-1)}$ and the edges $w v_{i}$ for $i=0, k+1,2(k+1), \ldots,(n-1)(k-1)$, i.e., rim edges are replaced with paths of equal length. Then

$$
r\left(V_{n}^{(k)}\right)=\frac{\left((k+3+K)^{n}-(k+3-K)^{n}\right)}{\left(2^{n} K\right)},
$$

where $K=\sqrt{k^{2}+6 k+5}$. We generalize Mikola's result by replacing spokes with paths of equal length. Furthermore, a generalized Mikola fan is obtained from a generalized fan by replacing all the interior edges and any two nonadjacent peripheral edges by paths of length $j+2$ and all the other edges by paths of length $k+2$.

The connected spanning subgraph count of a generalized Mikola fan, $G(n)$, satisfies the recurrence:

$$
G(n)=(k+2 j+4) G(n-1)-\left(j^{2}+3 j+2\right) G(n-2),
$$

where $n$ is the index as in the definition. Solving this yields a formula for subgraph counts of yet another class of uniformly sparse graphs.
6. ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The research of the second author was supported by Natural Sciences and Engineering Research Council Grant A5047.

## REFERENCES

1. D. W. Bange, A. E. Barkauskas, \& P. J. Slater. "Fibonacci Numbers in Tree Counts for Maximal Outerplane and Related Graphs." The Fibonacci Quarterly 19, no. 1 (1981):28-34.
2. S. D. Bedrosian. "Number of Spanning Trees in Multigraph Wheels." IEEE Trans. Circuit Theory CT-19 (1972):77-78.
3. G. D. Birkhoff \& D. C. Lewis. "Chromatic Polynomials." Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 60 (1946):345-451.
4. J. A. Bondy \& U. S. R. Murty. Graph Theory with Applications. London: Macmillan, 1976.
5. H. H. Crapo. "The Tutte Polynomial." Aequationes Mathematicae 3 (1969): 211-229.
6. R. J. Duffin. "Topology of Series-Parallel Networks." J. Math. AnaZ. and Applic. 10 (1965):303-318.
7. S. Even. Graph Algorithms. Potomac: Computer Science Press, 1979.
8. D. C. Fielder. "Fibonacci Numbers in Tree Counts for Sector and Related Graphs." The Fibonacci Quarterly 12, no. 4 (1974):355-359.
9. E. N. Gilbert. "Random Graphs." Ann. Math. Statist. 30 (1959):1141-1144.
10. A. J. W. Hilton. "Spanning Trees and Fibonacci and Lucas Numbers." The Fibonacci Quarterly 12, no. 3 (1974):259-262.
11. A. F. Horadam. "Generating Identities for Generalized Fibonacci and Lucas Triples." The Fibonacci Quarterly 15, no. 3 (1977):289-292.
12. C. L. Liu. Introduction to Combinatorial Mathematics. New York: McGrawHi11, 1968.
13. M. Mikola. "The Lucas Number as the Number of Spanning Trees." Prace. Stud. Vysokej Skoly doprav. Ziline Ser. Mat.-Ryz. 2 (1980):69-77.
14. B. R. Myers. "Number of Trees in a Whee1." IEEE Trans. Circuit Theory CT-18 (1971):280-282.
15. E. M. Neufeld. "Maximizing Cohesive Reliability in Series-Parallel Networks." Submitted for publication.
16. E. M. Neufeld \& C. J. Colbourn. "The Construction of Reliable SeriesParalle1 Networks." Congressus Numerantium, to appear.
17. E. M. Neufeld \& C. J. Colbourn. "The Most Reliable Series-Parallel Networks." Networks, to appear. Also, Technical Report 83-7, University of Saskatchewan, 1983.
18. D. J. Rose. "On Simple Characterizations of $k$-Trees." Discrete Mathematics 7 (1974):317-322.
19. J. Sedlacek. "On the Skeletons of a Graph or Digraph." In Combinatorial Structures and Their Applications, pp. 387-391, ed. by R. Guy, H. Hanani, N. Sauer and J. Schonheim. London: Gordon and Breach, 1969.
20. A. G. Shannon. "Fibonacci and Lucas Numbers and the Complexity of a Graph." The Fibonacci Quarterly 16, no. 1 (1978):1-4.
21. P. J. Slater. "Fibonacci Numbers in the Count of Spanning Trees." The Fibonacci Quarterly 15, no. 1 (1977):11-14.
22. W. T. Tutte. "A Contribution to the Theory of Chromatic Polynomials." Canad. J. Math 6 (1954):80-91.
23. W. T. Tutte. Connectivity in Graphs. London: Oxford Univ. Press, 1966.
24. W. T. Tutte. "On Dichromatic Polynomials." J. Combinatorial Theory 2 (1967):301-320.
25. W. T. Tutte. "The Dichromatic Polynomial." Proc. 5th British Combinatorial Conf. (1975):605-635.
26. P. Winter. "Generalized Steiner Problem in Outerplane Networks." Unpublished MS, DKIU, Inst. of Datalogy, Univ. of Copenhagen, Denmark, 1983.

# LONGEST SUCCESS RUNS AND FIBONACCI-TYPE POLYNOMIALS 

ANDREAS N. PHILIPPOU \& FROSSO S. MAKRI<br>University of Patras, Patras, Greece<br>(Submitted January 1984; Revised April 1984)<br>1. INTRODUCTION AND SUMMARY

Let $L_{n}$ be the length of the longest run of successes in $n(\geqslant 1)$ independent trials with constant success probability $p(0<p<1)$, and set $q=1-p$. In [3] McCarty assumed that $p=1 / 2$ and found a formula for the tail probabilities $P\left(L_{n} \geqslant k\right) \quad(1 \leqslant k \leqslant n)$ in terms of the Fibonacci sequence of order $k$ [see Remark 2.1 and Corollary 2.1(c)]. In this paper, we establish a complete generalization of McCarty's result by deriving a formula for $P\left(L_{n} \geqslant k\right)(1 \leqslant k \leqslant n)$ for any $p \in(0,1)$. Formulas are also given for $P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right)$ and $P\left(L_{n}=k\right)(0 \leqslant k \leqslant n)$. Our formulas are given in terms of the multinomial coefficients and in terms of the Fibonacci-type polynomials of order $k$ (see Lemma 2.1, Definition 2.1, and Theorem 2.1). As a corollary to Theorem 2.1, we find two enumeration theorems of Bollinger [2] involving, in his terminology, the number of binary numbers of length $n$ that do not have (or do have) a string of $k$ consecutive ones. We present these results in Section 2. In Section 3, we reconsider the waiting random variable $N_{k}(k \geqslant 1)$, which denotes the number of Bernoulli trials until the occurrence of the $k^{\text {th }}$ consecutive success, and we state and prove a recursive formula for $P\left(N_{k}=n\right)(n \geqslant k)$ which is very simple and useful for computational purposes (see Theorem 3.1). We also note an interesting relationship between $L_{n}$ and $N_{k}$. Finally, in Section 4, we show that $\sum_{k=0}^{n} P\left(L_{n}=k\right)=1$ and derive the probability generating function and factorial moments of $L_{n}$. A table of means and variances of $L_{n}$ when $p=1 / 2$ is given for $1 \leqslant n \leqslant 50$.

We end this section by mentioning that the proofs of the present paper depend on the methodology of [4] and some results of [4] and [6]. Unless otherwise explicitly specified, in this paper $k$ and $n$ are positive integers and $x$ and $t$ are positive reals.

## 2. LONGEST SUCCESS RUNS AND FIBONACCI-TYPE POLYNOMIALS

We shall first derive a formula for $P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right)$ by means of the methodology of Theorem 3.1 of Philippou and Muwafi [4].

Lemma 2.1: Let $L_{n}$ be the length of the longest success run in $n(\geqslant 1)$ Bernoulli trials. Then

$$
P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right)=p^{n} \sum_{i=0}^{k} \sum_{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k+1}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}{n_{1}, \cdots, n_{k+1}}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}, \quad 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n
$$

where the inner summation is over all nonnegative integers $n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k+1}$, such that $n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+(k+1) n_{k+1}=n-i$.

Proof: A typical element of the event ( $\left.L_{n} \leqslant k\right)$ is an arrangement

$$
x_{1} x_{2} \ldots x_{n_{1}}+\cdots+n_{k+1} \underbrace{s s \ldots s}_{i}
$$

such that $n_{1}$ of the $x^{\prime}$ s are $e_{1}=f, n_{2}$ of the $x^{\prime}$ s are $e_{2}=s f, \ldots, n_{k+1}$ of the $x^{\prime} \mathrm{s}$ are $e_{k+1}=\underbrace{s s \ldots s}_{k} f$, and $n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+(k+1) n_{k+1}=n-i(0 \leqslant i \leqslant k)$. Fix $n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k+1}$ and $i$. Then the number of the above arrangements is

$$
\left(\begin{array}{l}
n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1} \\
n_{1},
\end{array}, \ldots, n_{k+1}\right)
$$

and each one of them has probability

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P(x_{1} x_{2} \ldots x_{n_{1}}+\cdots+n_{k+1} \underbrace{s s \ldots s}_{i}) \\
& =\left[P\left\{e_{1}\right\}\right]^{n_{1}}\left[P\left\{e_{2}\right\}\right]^{n_{2}} \cdots\left[P\left\{e_{k+1}\right\}\right]^{n_{k+1}} P\{\underbrace{s s \ldots s}_{i}\} \\
& =p^{n}(q / p)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}, \quad 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n,
\end{aligned}
$$

by the independence of the trials, the definition of $e_{j}(1 \leqslant j \leqslant k+1)$, and $P\{s\}=p$. Therefore,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P(\text { all } x_{1} x_{2} \ldots x_{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}} \underbrace{s s \ldots s}_{i} ; n_{j}(1 \leqslant j \leqslant k+1) \text { and } i \text { fixed }) \\
& =\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k+1}} p^{n}(q / p)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}, \quad 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n
\end{aligned}
$$

But $n_{j}(1 \leqslant j \leqslant k+1)$ are nonnegative integers which may vary, subject to the condition $n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+(k+1) n_{k+1}=n-i$. Furthermore, $i$ may vary over the integers $0,1, \ldots, k$. Consequently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right) \\
& =P(\operatorname{all} x_{1} x_{2} \ldots x_{n_{1}}+\cdots+n_{k+1} \underbrace{s \ldots s}_{i} ; n_{j} \geqslant 0 \quad \ni \sum_{j=1}^{k+1} j n_{j}=n-i, 0 \leqslant i \leqslant n) \\
& =\sum_{i=0}^{k} \sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k+1} \ni \\
n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+(k+1) n_{k+1}=n-i}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}{n_{1}, \cdots, n_{k+1}} p^{n}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}, 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n,
\end{aligned}
$$

which establishes the lemma.
The formula for $P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right)$ derived in Lemma 2.1 can be simplified by means of the Fibonacci-type polynomials of order $k[6]$. These polynomials, as well as the Fibonacci numbers of order $k$ [4], have been defined for $k \geqslant 2$, and the need arises presently for a proper extension of them to cover the cases $k=0$ and $k=1$. We shall keep the terminology of [6] and [4] despite the extension.

Definition 2.1: The sequence of polynomials $\left\{F_{n}^{(k)}(x)\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ is said to be the sequence of Fibonacci-type polynomials of order $k^{n}$ if $F_{n}^{(0)}(x)=0(n \geqslant 0)$, and for $k \geqslant 1, F_{0}^{(k)}(x)=0, F_{1}^{(k)}(x)=1$, and

$$
F_{n}^{(k)}(x)= \begin{cases}x\left[F_{n-1}^{(k)}(x)+\cdots+F_{1}^{(k)}(x)\right] & \text { if } 2 \leqslant n \leqslant k+1 \\ x\left[F_{n-1}^{(k)}(x)+\cdots+F_{n-k}^{(k)}(x)\right] & \text { if } n \geqslant k+2 .\end{cases}
$$

Definition 2.2: The sequence $\left\{F_{n}^{(k)}\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ is said to be the Fibonacci sequence of order $k$ if $F_{n}^{(0)}=0(n \geqslant 0)$, and for $k \geqslant 1, F_{0}^{(k)}=0, F_{1}^{(k)}=1$, and

$$
F_{n}^{(k)}= \begin{cases}F_{n-1}^{(k)}+\cdots+F_{1}^{(k)} & \text { if } 2 \leqslant n \leqslant k+1 \\ F_{n-1}^{(k)}+\cdots+F_{n-k}^{(k)} & \text { if } n \geqslant k+2 .\end{cases}
$$

It follows from Definitions 2.1 and 2.2 that

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{n}^{(k)}(1)=F_{n}^{(k)}, n \geqslant 0 \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following lemma is useful in proving Theorem 2.1 below.
Lemma 2.2: Let $\left\{F_{n}^{(k)}(x)\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be the sequence of Fibonacci-type polynomials of order $k(k \geqslant 1)$. Then,
(a) $F_{n}^{(1)}(x)=x^{n-1}, n \geqslant 1$, and $F_{n}^{(k)}(x)=x(1+x)^{n-2}, 2 \leqslant n \leqslant k+1$;
(b) $\quad F_{n+1}^{(k)}(x)=\sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k} \ni>\\ n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+k n_{k}=n}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}{n_{1}, \cdots, n_{k}} x^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}, n \geqslant 0$.

Proof: Part (a) of the lemma follows easily from Definition 2.1. For $k=1$, the right-hand side of (b) becomes $x^{n}$, which equals $F_{n+1}^{(1)}(x)(n \geqslant 0)$ by (a), so that (b) is true. For $k \geqslant 2$, (b) is true because of Theorem 2.1(a) of [6].

Remark 2.1: Definition 2.2, Lemma 2.2(a), and (2.1) imply that the Fibonacci sequence of order $k(k \geqslant 1)$ coincides with the $k$-bonacci sequence (as it is given in McCarty [3]).

We can now state and prove Theorem 2.1, which provides another formula for $P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right)$. The new formula is a simplified version of the one given in Lemma 2.1, and it is stated in terms of the multinomial coefficients as well as in terms of the Fibonacci-type polynomials of order $k$. Formulas are also given for $P\left(L_{n}=k\right)(0 \leqslant k \leqslant n)$ and $P\left(L_{n} \geqslant k\right)(1 \leqslant k \leqslant n)$.
Theorem 2.1: Let $\left\{F_{n}^{(k)}(x)\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be the sequence of Fibonacci-type polynomials of order $k$, and denote by $L_{n}$ the length of the longest run of successes in $n(\geqslant 1$ ) Bernoulli trials. Then,
(a) $P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right)=\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \quad \sum_{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k+1} \ni} \quad\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k+1}}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}$

$$
=\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p), 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n ;
$$

(b) $P\left(L_{n}=k\right)=\frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)-F_{n+2}^{(k)}(q / p)\right], 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n$;
(c) $P\left(L_{n} \geqslant k\right)=1-\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} F_{n+2}^{(k)}(q / p), 1 \leqslant k \leqslant n$.

Proof: (a) Lemma 2.1, Lemma 2.2(b) applied with $x=q / p$, and Definition 2.1 give

$$
\begin{aligned}
P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right) & =p^{n} \sum_{i=0}^{k} F_{n+1-i}^{(k+1)}(q / p)=\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p), 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n, \\
& =\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{\substack{n_{1} \\
n_{1}+\cdots, n_{k+1} \ni}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}}{n_{1}, \cdots, n_{k+1}}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k+1}},
\end{aligned}
$$

## LONGEST SUCCESS RUNS AND FIBONACCI-TYPE POLYNOMIALS

which was to be shown. In order to show (b), we first observe that

$$
\begin{aligned}
P\left(L_{n}=k\right) & =P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right)-P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k-1\right) \\
& =\frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)-F_{n+2}^{(k)}(q / p)\right], 1 \leqslant k \leqslant n
\end{aligned}
$$

by (a). Next, we note that

$$
P\left(L_{n}=0\right)=P\left(L_{n} \leqslant 0\right)=\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} F_{n+2}^{(1)}(q / p)=\frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[F_{n+2}^{(1)}(q / p)-F_{n+2}^{(0)}(q / p)\right]
$$

since $F_{n+2}^{(0)}(q / p)=0$ by Definition 2.1. The last two relations show (b). Finally, (c) is also true, since

$$
P\left(L_{n} \geqslant k\right)=1-P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k-1\right)=1-\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} F_{n+2}^{(k)}(q / p), 1 \leqslant k \leqslant n, \text { by } \text { (a) }
$$

We now have the following obvious corollary to the theorem.
Corollary 2.1: Let $\left\{F_{n}^{(k)}\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be the Fibonacci sequence of order $k$ and let $L_{n}$ be as in Theorem 2.1. Assume $p=1 / 2$. Then
(a) $P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k\right)=F_{n+2}^{(k+1)} / 2^{n}, \quad 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n$;
(b) $P\left(L_{n}=k\right)=\left[F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}-F_{n+2}^{(k)}\right] / 2^{n}, \quad 0 \leqslant k \leqslant n$;
(c) $P\left(L_{n} \geqslant k\right)=1-F_{n+2}^{(k)} / 2^{n}, \quad 1 \leqslant k \leqslant n$.

Remark 2.2: McCarty [3] showed Corollary 2.1(c) by different methods.
We now proceed to offer the following alternative formulation and proof of Theorems 3.1 and 3.2 of Bollinger [2].

Corollary 2.2: For any finite set $A$, denote by $N(A)$ the number of elements in $A$, and let $p, L_{n}$, and $\left\{F_{n}^{(k)}\right\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ be as in Corollary 2.1. Then
(a) $N\left(L_{n}<k\right)=F_{n+2}^{(k)}, \quad n \geqslant 1$;
(b) $N\left(L_{n}=k\right)=F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}-F_{n+2}^{(k)}, \quad n \geqslant 1$.

Proof: (a) Corollary 2.1(a) and the classical definition of probability give

$$
\frac{N\left(L_{n}<k\right)}{2^{n}}=P\left(L_{n}<k\right)=P\left(L_{n} \leqslant k-1\right)=\frac{F_{n+2}^{(k)}}{2^{n}}, \quad 1 \leqslant k \leqslant n+1
$$

Furthermore, it is obvious that

$$
N\left(L_{n}<0\right)=0 \quad \text { and } \quad N\left(L_{n}<k\right)=2^{n}, \quad k \geqslant n+2
$$

The last two relations and Lemma 2.2(a) establish (a). Part (b) follows from Corollary 2.1(b), by means of the classical definition of probability and Lemma 2.2(a), in an analogous manner.

## 3. WAITING TIMES AND LONGEST SUCCESS RUNS

Denote by $N_{k}$ the number of Bernoulli trials until the occurrence of the first success run of length $k(k \geqslant 2)$. Shane [7], Turner [8], Philippou and Muwafi [4], and Uppuluri and Patil [9] have all obtained alternative formulas for $P\left(N_{k}=n\right)(n \geqslant k)$. Presently, we derive another one, which is very simple and quite useful for computational purposes.

Theorem 3.1: Let $N_{k}$ be a random variable denoting the number of Bernoulli trials until the occurrence of the first success run of length $k(k \geqslant 1)$. Then

$$
P\left(N_{k}=n\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
p^{k}, \quad n=k \\
q p^{k}, \quad k+1 \leqslant n \leqslant 2 k \\
P\left[N_{k}=n-1\right]-q p^{k} P\left[N_{k}=n-1-k\right], \quad n \geqslant 2 k+1
\end{array}\right.
$$

The proof will be based on the following lemma of [4] and [6]. (See also [5].)

Lemma 3.1: Let $N_{k}$ be as in Theorem 3.1. Then
(a) $P\left(N_{k}=n\right)=p^{n} \sum_{n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+n_{k} \neq n n_{k}=n-k}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}{n_{1}, \cdots, n_{k}}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}, n \geqslant k$;
(b) $P\left(N_{k} \leqslant n\right)=1-\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k} \ni \exists}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}{n_{1}, \cdots, n_{k}}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}, n \geqslant k$.

Proof of Theorem 3.1: By simple comparison, (a) and (b) of Lemma 3.1 give

$$
P\left(N_{k} \leqslant n\right)=1-\frac{1}{q p^{k}} P\left(N_{k}=n+1+k\right), \quad n \geqslant k
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{align*}
P\left(N_{k}=n\right) & =q p^{k}\left[1-P\left(N_{k} \leqslant n-k-1\right)\right]=q p^{k}\left[1-\sum_{i=k}^{n-k-1} P\left(N_{k}=i\right)\right] \\
& =P\left[N_{k}=n-1\right]-q p^{k} P\left[N_{k}=n-1-k\right], \quad n \geqslant 2 k+1 . \tag{3.1}
\end{align*}
$$

Next,

$$
\begin{align*}
P\left(N_{k}=n\right) & =p^{n} F_{n-k+1}^{(k)}(q / p), n \geqslant k, \text { by Lemma } 3.1(\mathrm{a}) \text { and Lemma } 2.2(\mathrm{~b}), \\
& =p^{n}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)\left(1+\frac{q}{p}\right)^{n-k-1}, k+1 \leqslant n \leqslant 2 k, \text { by Lemma } 2.2(\mathrm{a}), \\
& =q p^{k}, k+1 \leqslant n \leqslant 2 k . \tag{3.2}
\end{align*}
$$

Finally, we note that

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(N_{k}=k\right)=P\{\underbrace{s s \ldots s}_{k}\}=p^{k} . \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Relations (3.1)-(3.3) establish the theorem.

Remark 3.1: An alternative proof of another version of Theorem 3.1, based on first principles, is given independently by Aki, Kuboki, and Hirano [1].

We end this section by noting the following relation between $L_{n}$ and $N_{k}$.
Proposition 3.1: Let $L_{n}$ be the length of the longest success run in $n(\geqslant 1)$ Bernoulli trials, and denote by $N_{k}$ the number of Bernoulli trials until the occurrence of the first success run of length $k(k \geqslant 1)$. Then

$$
P\left(L_{n} \geqslant k\right)=P\left(N_{k} \leqslant n\right)
$$

Proof: It is an immediate corollary of Theorem 2.1 and Lemma 3.1(b).
4. GENERATING FUNCTION AND FACTORIAL MOMENTS OF $L_{n}$

In this section, we show that $\left\{P\left(L_{n}=k\right)\right\}_{k=0}^{n}$ is a probability distribution and derive the probability generating function and factorial moments of $L_{n}$. It should be noted that our present results are given in terms of finite sums of Fibonacci-type polynomials where the running index is the order of the polynomial. It is conceivable that they could be simplified, but we are not aware of any results concerning such sums, even for the Fibonacci sequence of order $k_{0}$. For the case $p=1 / 2$, we give a table of the means and variances of $L_{n}$ for $1 \leqslant$ $n \leqslant 50$.

Proposition 4.1: Let $L_{n}$ be the length of the longest success run in $n(\geqslant 1)$ Bernoulli trials, and denote its generating function by $g_{n}(t)$. Also, set

$$
x^{(0)}=1 \quad \text { and } \quad x^{(r)}=x(x-1) \ldots(x-r+1), \quad r \geqslant 1
$$

Then
(a) $\sum_{k=0}^{n} P\left(L_{n}=k\right)=1$;
(b) $g_{n}(t)=t^{n}-(t-1) \frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} t^{k} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p), n \geqslant 1$.
(c) $E\left(L_{n}^{(r)}\right)=n^{(r)}-r \frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{k=r-1}^{n-1} k^{(r-1)} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p), 1 \leqslant r \leqslant n$;
(d) $E\left(L_{n}\right)=n-\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p), n \geqslant 1$;
(e) $\sigma^{2}\left(L_{n}\right)=\frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[(2 n-1) \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)-2 \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} k F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)\right]$

$$
-\left[\frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)\right]^{2}, n \geqslant 2
$$

Proof: (a) We observe that $F_{n+2}^{(0)}(q / p)=0$, by Definition 2.1 , and

$$
F_{n+2}^{(n+1)}(q / p)=(q / p)[1+(q / p)]^{n}=q / p^{n+1}, \text { by Lemma } 2 \cdot 2(\mathrm{a})
$$

Then Theorem 2.1(b) gives

## LONGEST SUCCESS RUNS AND FIBONACCI-TYPE POLYNOMIALS

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{k=0}^{n} P\left(L_{n}=k\right) & =\sum_{k=0}^{n} \frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)-F_{n+2}^{(k)}(q / p)\right] \\
& =\frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[F_{n+2}^{(n+1)}(q / p)-F_{n+2}^{(0)}(q / p)\right]=1 .
\end{aligned}
$$

(b) By means of Theorem 2.1(b), Definition 2.1, and Lemma 2.2(a), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
g_{n}(t)=E\left(t^{L_{n}}\right) & =\sum_{k=0}^{n} t^{k} P\left(L_{n}=k\right) \\
& =\sum_{k=0}^{n} t^{k} \frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)-F_{n+2}^{(k)}(q / p)\right] \\
& =\frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[\sum_{k=0}^{n} t^{k} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)-\sum_{k=-1}^{n-1} t^{k+1} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)\right] \\
& =\frac{p^{n+1}}{q}\left[t^{n} F_{n+2}^{(n+1)}(q / p)+\sum_{k=0}^{n-1}\left(t^{k}-t^{k+1}\right) F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p)\right] \\
& =t^{n} \frac{p^{n+1}}{q} F_{n+2}^{(n+1)}(q / p)+(1-t) \frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} t^{k} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p) \\
& =t^{n}-(t-1) \frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} t^{k} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p), n \geqslant 1 .
\end{aligned}
$$

(c) It can be seen from (b), by induction on $r$, that the $r^{\text {th }}$ derivative of $g_{n}(t)$ is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{r}}{\partial t^{r}} g_{n}(t)=n^{(r)} t^{n-r} & -r \frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{k=r-1}^{n-1} k^{(r-1)} t^{k-r+1} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p) \\
& -(t-1) \frac{p^{n+1}}{q} \sum_{k=r}^{n-1} k^{(r)} t^{k-r_{F}} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}(q / p), 1 \leqslant r \leqslant n .
\end{aligned}
$$

The last relation and the formula

$$
E\left(L_{n}^{(r)}\right)=\left.\frac{\partial^{r}}{\partial t^{r}} g_{n}(t)\right|_{t=1}
$$

establish (c). Now (d) follows from (c) for $r=1$. Finally, (e) follows from (c) by means of the relation

$$
\sigma^{2}\left(L_{n}\right)=E\left(L_{n}^{(2)}\right)+E\left(L_{n}\right)-\left[E\left(L_{n}\right)\right]^{2}
$$

Corollary 4.1: Let $L_{n}$ be as in Proposition 4.1 and assume $p=1 / 2$. Then
(a) $g_{n}(t)=t^{n}-\frac{(t-1)}{2^{n}} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} t^{k} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}, n \geqslant 1$.
(b) $E\left(L_{n}^{(r)}\right)=n^{(r)}-\frac{r}{2^{n}} \sum_{k=r-1}^{n-1} \mathcal{k}^{(r-1)} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}, 1 \leqslant r \leqslant n$;
(c) $E\left(L_{n}\right)=n-\frac{1}{2^{n}} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}, n \geqslant 1$.
(d) $\sigma^{2}\left(L_{n}\right)=\frac{2 n-1}{2^{n}} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}-\frac{1}{2^{n-1}} \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} k F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}-\frac{1}{2^{2 n}}\left[\sum_{k=0}^{n-1} F_{n+2}^{(k+1)}\right]^{2}, n \geqslant 2$.

We conclude this paper by presenting a table of means and variances of $L_{n}$, when $p=1 / 2$, for $1 \leqslant n \leqslant 50$.

| $n$ | $E\left(L_{n}\right)$ | $\sigma^{2}\left(L_{n}\right)$ | $n$ | $E\left(L_{n}\right)$ | $\sigma^{2}\left(L_{n}\right)$ |
| ---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | .500000 | .250000 | 26 | 4.090650 | 2.691060 |
| 2 | 1.000000 | .500000 | 27 | 4.142980 | 2.713386 |
| 3 | 1.375000 | .734375 | 28 | 4.193483 | 2.734376 |
| 4 | 1.687500 | .964844 | 29 | 4.242285 | 2.754142 |
| 5 | 1.937500 | 1.183594 | 30 | 4.289496 | 2.772786 |
| 6 | 2.156250 | 1.381836 | 31 | 4.335215 | 2.790402 |
| 7 | 2.343750 | 1.553711 | 32 | 4.379535 | 2.807071 |
| 8 | 2.511719 | 1.702988 | 33 | 4.422539 | 2.822872 |
| 9 | 2.662109 | 1.829189 | 34 | 4.464300 | 2.837871 |
| 10 | 2.798828 | 1.938046 | 35 | 4.504889 | 2.852132 |
| 11 | 2.923828 | 2.031307 | 36 | 4.544370 | 2.865711 |
| 12 | 3.039063 | 2.112732 | 37 | 4.582799 | 2.878660 |
| 13 | 3.145752 | 2.184079 | 38 | 4.620233 | 2.891025 |
| 14 | 3.245117 | 2.247535 | 39 | 4.656719 | 2.902849 |
| 15 | 3.338043 | 2.304336 | 40 | 4.692306 | 2.914170 |
| 16 | 3.425308 | 2.355688 | 41 | 4.727035 | 2.925023 |
| 17 | 3.507553 | 2.402393 | 42 | 4.760948 | 2.935439 |
| 18 | 3.585327 | 2.445150 | 43 | 4.794080 | 2.945448 |
| 19 | 3.659092 | 2.484463 | 44 | 4.826468 | 2.955075 |
| 20 | 3.729246 | 2.520765 | 45 | 4.858143 | 2.964345 |
| 21 | 3.796131 | 2.554392 | 46 | 4.889137 | 2.973278 |
| 22 | 3.860043 | 2.585633 | 47 | 4.919477 | 2.981895 |
| 23 | 3.921239 | 2.614727 | 48 | 4.949192 | 2.990214 |
| 24 | 3.979944 | 2.641880 | 49 | 4.978305 | 2.998250 |
| 25 | 4.036356 | 2.667271 | 50 | 5.006842 | 3.006021 |

## REFERENCES

1. S. Aki, H. Kuboki, \& K. Hirano. "On Discrete Distributions of Order k." Private communication, 1984.
2. R. C. Bollinger. "Fibonacci $k$-Sequences, Pascal- $T$ Triangles and $k$-in-a-Row Problems." The Fibonacci Quarterly 22, no. 2 (1984):146-151.
3. C. P. McCarty. "Coin Tossing and r-Bonacci Numbers." In A Collection of Manuscripts Related to the Fibonacci Sequence: 18th Anniversary Volume, pp. 130-132, ed. by V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., and Marjorie Bickne11-Johnson. Santa Clara, Calif.: The Fibonacci Association, 1980.
4. A. N. Philippou \& A. A. Muwafi. "Waiting for the Kth Consecutive Success and the Fibonacci Sequence of Order K." The Fibonacci Quarterly 20, no. 1 (1982):28-32.
5. A. N. Philippou, C. Georghiou, \& G. N. Philippou. "A Generalized Geometric Distribution and Some of Its Properties." Statistics and Probability Letters 1, no. 4 (1983):171-175.
6. A. N. Philippou, C. Georghiou, \& G. N. Philippou. "Fibonacci-Type Polynomials of Order $K$ with Probability Applications." The Fibonacci Quarterly 23, no. 2 (1985):100-105.
1985]
7. H. D. Shane. "A Fibonacci Probability Function." The Fibonacci Quarterly 11, no. 6 (1973):517-522.
8. S. J. Turner. "Probability via the Nth Order Fibonacci-T Sequence." The Fibonacei Quarterly 17, no. 1 (1979):23-28.
9. V. R. R. Uppuluri \& S. A. Patil. "Waiting Times and Generalized Fibonacci Sequences." The Fibonacci Quarterly 21, no. 4 (1983):242-249.

## ACKNOWLEDGMENT

The research of A. N. Philippou has been supported through a grant of the Greek Ministry of Research and Technology.

## $\bullet \diamond \diamond \diamond$

SECOND INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE
ON FIBONACCI NUMBERS AND THEIR APPLICATIONS

> August 13-16, 1986
> San Jose State University
> San Jose, California 95192


> INTERNATIONAL COMMITTEE

Bergum, G. (U.S.A.)
Chairman
Long, C. (U.S.A.)
Cochairman
Philippou, A. (Greece)
Horadam, A. (Australia)
Kiss, P. (Hungary)
Ando, S. (Japan)

## CALL FOR PAPERS

The SECOND INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON FIBONACCI NUMBERS AND THEIR APPLICATIONS will take place at San Jose State University, San Jose, CA, Aug. 13-16, 1986. This conference is sponsored jointly by The Fibonacci Association and San Jose State University.

Papers on all branches of mathematics and science related to the Fibonacci numbers and their generalizations are welcome. Abstracts are requested by February 15, 1986. Manuscripts are requested by April 1, 1986. Abstracts and manuscripts should be sent to the chairman of the local committee. Invited and contributed papers will appear in the Conference Proceedings, which are expected to be published.

The program for the Conference will be mailed to all participants, and to those individuals who have indicated an interest in attending the conference, by July 15, 1986. All talks should be limited to one hour.

For further information concerning the conference, please contact either of the following:
Professor G. E. Bergum, Editor
Professor Calvin Long The Fibonacci Quarterly Department of Mathematics Department of Mathematics South Dakota State University PO Box 2220
Brookings SD 57007-1297

# ON BERNSTEIN'S COMBINATORIAL IDENTITIES 

MARIE-LOUIS LAVERTU \& CLAUDE LEVESQUE

Université Laval, Québec, P. Québec, Canada GlK 7 P4
(Submitted February 1984)
To the memory of Professar Dr. Leon Bernstein*

## 0. INTRODUCTION

Using elementary properties of algebraic numbers of certain finite extensions of $\mathbb{C}, \mathrm{L}$. Bernstein obtained in [1], [2], [3], [4], and [5] some combinatorial identities. In this paper, we want to give a clear and quick matrix treatment of Bernstein's technique, from which it will be seen that his combinatorial identities are in fact determinants.

In Section 1, writing the powers of an algebraic number $\omega$ of degree $m$ over Q as

$$
\omega^{n}=r_{1 n}+r_{2 n} \omega+\cdots+r_{m n} \omega^{m-1}
$$

we give, in (1.4) and (1.5), the $m^{\text {th }}$-order linear recurrences satisfied by the numbers

$$
r_{j n}, n \in \mathbb{Z}, j=1,2, \ldots, m
$$

Let us note that $L$. Bernstein is always considering the case where $j=1$ and $\omega$ is a unit of $\mathbb{Q}(\omega)$ : see [3]; as far as [1], [2], [4], and [5] are concerned, L. Bernstein deals with the case $m=3$.

In Section 2, Euler's generating functions are calculated in two ways: one with the help of the sums $p_{t}$ of all symmetric functions of weight $t$; the other using the multinomial theorem. The second method is used by L. Bernstein, but the concluding remark of the last paragraph still applies.

A very general procedure combining the properties of the norm of an algebraic integer and Cramer's rule is described in Section 3, which leads to what can be called combinatorial identities.

In Section 4, we conclude this paper by giving a formula for $r_{j n}$ involving the determinant of a Vandermonde matrix and the determinant of a matrix that is "almost" of the Vandermonde type.

## 1. RECURRENCE RELATIONS

Let $\omega$ be a root of the polynomial

$$
f(X)=X^{m}+k_{1} X^{m-1}+\cdots+k_{m-1} X+k_{m}=\left(X-\alpha_{1}\right)\left(X-\alpha_{2}\right) \ldots\left(X-\alpha_{m}\right)
$$

irreducible over $\mathbb{C}$ with $m$ distinct (nonzero) roots $\alpha_{1}=\omega, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{m}$, whence the field $\mathbb{Q}(\omega)$ is of degree $m$ over $\mathbb{Q}$. Let us consider the (positive, negative, zero) powers of $\omega$.

[^0]For $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, let

$$
\omega^{n}=r_{1 n}+r_{2 n} \omega+\cdots+r_{m n} \omega^{m-1}
$$

with coefficients in $\mathbb{Q}$. Since

$$
\omega^{m}=-k_{1} \omega^{m-1}-\cdots-k_{m-1} \omega-k_{m}
$$

we obtain the equality

$$
\begin{aligned}
\omega^{n+1}=-k_{m} r_{m n}+\left(r_{1 n}-k_{m-1} r_{m n}\right) \omega & +\left(r_{2 n}-k_{m-2} r_{m n}\right) \omega^{2}+\cdots \\
& +\left(r_{m-1, n}-k_{1} r_{m n}\right) \omega^{m-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

which leads to the system

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r_{1, n+1}=0 r_{1 n}+0 r_{2 n}+\cdots+0 r_{m-1, n}-k_{m} r_{m n}  \tag{1.1}\\
r_{2, n+1}=1 r_{1 n}+0 r_{2 n}+\cdots+0 r_{m-1, n}-k_{m-1} r_{m n}, \\
r_{3, n+1}=0 r_{1 n}+1 r_{2 n}+\cdots+0 r_{m-1, n}-k_{m-2} r_{m n}, \\
\vdots \\
\vdots \\
r_{m, n+1}=0 r_{1 n}+0 r_{2 n}+\cdots+1 r_{m-1, n}-k_{1} r_{m n} .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Define the matrices

$$
\begin{aligned}
& C=\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & -k_{m} \\
1 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & -k_{m-1} \\
0 & 1 & \cdots & 0 & -k_{m-2} \\
\vdots & \vdots & & \vdots & \vdots \\
0 & 0 & \cdots & 1 & -k_{1}
\end{array}\right], \quad R_{n}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
r_{1 n} \\
r_{2 n} \\
r_{3 n} \\
\vdots \\
r_{m n}
\end{array}\right], \\
& \Omega=\left[\begin{array}{lllll}
1 & \omega & \omega^{2} & \ldots & \omega^{m-1}
\end{array}\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

of dimension $m \times m, m \times 1,1 \times m, m \times m$, respectively.
Hence, we have $\omega^{n}=\Omega R_{n}$ and

$$
R_{n}=I_{m} R_{n}, \quad R_{n+1}=C R_{n}, \ldots, R_{n+t}=C^{t} R_{n}, \ldots,
$$

from which we conclude

$$
R_{n}=C^{n} R_{0} \quad \text { with } R_{0}=\left[\begin{array}{llll}
1 & 0 & \ldots & 0
\end{array}\right]^{t}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{j n}=(j, 1) \text { element of } C^{n} \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is worth noting that system (1.1) leads to the following matrix, which means that it suffices to have a formula for $r_{1 t}$ in order to know all the coefficients of $\omega^{n}$ :

$$
R_{n}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
r_{1 n} \\
r_{1, n-1}+\frac{k_{m-1}}{k_{m}} r_{1 n} \\
r_{1, n-2}+\frac{k_{m-1}}{k_{m}} r_{1, n-1}+\frac{k_{m-2}}{k_{m}} r_{1 n} \\
\vdots \\
r_{1, n+1-m}+\frac{k_{m-1}}{k_{m}} r_{1, n+2-m}+\cdots+\frac{k_{1}}{k_{m}} r_{1 n}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

It is well known that the characteristic equation of $C$ is

$$
\lambda^{m}+k_{1} \lambda^{m-1}+\cdots+k_{m-1} \lambda+k_{m}
$$

whereupon the eigenvalues of $C$ are $\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{m}$. Since

$$
C^{m}=-k_{1} C^{m-1}-\cdots-k_{m-1} C-k_{m} I_{m}
$$

we deduce

$$
R_{n+m}=C^{m} R_{n}=-k_{1} R_{n+m-1}-\cdots-k_{m-1} R_{n+1}-k_{m} R_{n},
$$

from which we conclude (with $1 \leqslant j \leqslant m$ ):

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{j n}=-k_{1} r_{j, n-1}-\cdots-k_{m-1} r_{j, n-m+1}-k_{m} r_{j, n-m} . \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular we obtain, for the coefficients of $\omega^{t}$ and $\omega^{-t}$ with $t \geqslant m$, the two following $m^{\text {th }}$-order linear recurrences (with $1 \leqslant j \leqslant m$ ):

$$
\begin{align*}
& r_{j t}=-k_{1} r_{j, t-1}-\cdots-k_{m-1} r_{j, t-m+1}-k_{m} r_{j, t-m},  \tag{1.4}\\
& r_{j,-t}=-\frac{k_{m-1}}{k_{m}} r_{j,-t+1}-\cdots-\frac{k_{1}}{k_{m}} r_{j,-t+m-1}-\frac{1}{k_{m}} r_{j,-t+m}, \tag{1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

with the initial conditions for $0 \leqslant i \leqslant m-1$ being

$$
\begin{align*}
& r_{j i}=(j, 1) \text { element of } C^{i}= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } j=i+1, \\
0 & \text { elsewhere, }\end{cases}  \tag{1.6}\\
& r_{j,-i}=(j, 1) \text { element of } C^{-i} . \tag{1.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that for the rest of this article, as opposed to [1], [2], [3], [4], and [5], we do not restrict ourselves to the case $j=1$.

## 2. GENERATING FUNCTIONS

Using the $m^{\text {th }}$-order linear recurrence given in (1.4) and the known values of $r_{j i}$ in (1.6) we obtain, for $j=1, \ldots, m$,

$$
\left(\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} r_{j n} X^{n}\right)\left(1+k_{1} X+\cdots+k_{m-1} X^{m-1}+k_{m} X^{m}\right)=X^{j-1}+k_{1} X^{j}+\cdots+k_{m-j} X^{m-1}
$$

So

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} r_{j n} X^{n} & =\frac{X^{j-1}+k_{1} X^{j}+\cdots+k_{m-j} X^{m-1}}{1+k_{1} X+\cdots+k_{m-1} X^{m-1}+k_{m} X^{m}} \\
& =\frac{X^{j-1}+k_{1} X^{j}+\cdots+k_{m-j} X^{m-1}}{\left(1-\alpha_{1} X\right)\left(1-\alpha_{2} X\right) \cdots\left(1-\alpha_{m} X\right)} \\
& =\left(X^{j-1}+k_{1} X^{j}+\cdots+k_{m-j} X^{m-1}\right)\left(1+p_{1} X+p_{2} X^{2}+\cdots+p_{t} X^{t}+\cdots\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $p_{t}$ stands for the sum of all symmetric functions of weight $t$ in $\alpha_{1}, \ldots$, $\alpha_{m}$. Hence, we conclude

$$
r_{j n}= \begin{cases}\sum_{t=0}^{m-j} k_{t} p_{n-j+1-t} & \text { if } n \geqslant j-1  \tag{2.1}\\ 0 & \text { if } 0 \leqslant n<j-1\end{cases}
$$

where, as stated in [6],

$$
p_{t}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\alpha_{i}^{m-1+t}}{f^{\prime}\left(\alpha_{i}\right)}, \text { with } p_{0}=k_{0}=1, p_{-1}=p_{-2}=\cdots=p_{-m+1}=0
$$

Similarly, using (1.5), (1.3), and then (1.6), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} r_{j,-n} X^{n}\right)\left(k_{m}+k_{m-1} X+\cdots+k_{1} X^{m-1}+X^{m}\right) \\
& =k_{m} r_{j 0}+k_{m} r_{j,-1} X+k_{m} r_{j,-2} X^{2}+\cdots+k_{m} r_{j,-m+2} X^{m-2}+k_{m} r_{j,-m+1} X^{m-1} \\
& +k_{m-1} r_{j 0} X+k_{m-1} r_{j,-1} X^{2}+\cdots+k_{m-1} r_{j,-m+3} X^{m-2}+k_{m-1} r_{j,-m+2} X^{m-1} \\
& +k_{m-2} r_{j 0} X^{2}+\cdots+k_{m-2} r_{j,-m+4} X^{m-2}+k_{m-2} r_{j,-m+3} X^{m-1} \\
& +k_{2} r_{j 0} X^{m-2}+k_{2} r_{j,-1} X^{m-1} \\
& +k_{1} r_{j 0} X^{m-1} \\
& =k_{m} r_{j 0}-r_{j, m-1} X-r_{j, m-2} X^{2}-\cdots-r_{j 2} X^{m-2}-r_{j 1} X^{m-1} \\
& -k_{1} r_{j, m-2} X-k_{1} r_{j, m-3} X^{2}-\cdots-k_{1} r_{j 1} X^{m-2} \\
& \vdots \quad \vdots \\
& -k_{m-3} r_{j 2} X-k_{m-3} r_{j 1} X^{2} \\
& -k_{m-2} r_{j 1} X \\
& =K_{j}(X),
\end{aligned}
$$

where the polynomial $K_{j}(X)$ is defined by:

$$
K_{j}(X)= \begin{cases}k_{m} & \text { if } j=1  \tag{2.2}\\ -k_{m-j} X-k_{m-j-1} X^{2}-\cdots-k_{0} X^{m-j+1} & \text { if } 2 \leqslant j \leqslant m\end{cases}
$$

Thus,

$$
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} r_{j,-n} X^{n}=\frac{K_{j}(X)}{k_{m}\left(1-\alpha_{1}^{-1} X\right)\left(1-\alpha_{2}^{-1} X\right) \ldots\left(1-\alpha_{m}^{-1} X\right)}
$$

For $i=1, \ldots, m$, let $k_{i}^{*}$ denote the $i^{\text {th }}$ elementary symmetric functions in $\alpha_{1}^{-1}, \ldots, \alpha_{m}^{-1}$, so that

$$
k_{i}^{*}=(-1)^{i} k_{m-i} / k_{m}
$$

as is well known. Now, let $p_{t}^{*}$ stand for the sum of all symmetric functions of weight $t$ in $\alpha_{1}^{-1}, \ldots, \alpha_{m}^{-1}$; letting

$$
\begin{aligned}
F(Y) & =Y^{m}+\frac{k_{m-1}}{k_{m}} Y^{m-1}+\cdots+\frac{k_{1}}{k_{m}} Y+\frac{1}{k_{m}} \\
& =\left(Y-\alpha_{1}^{-1}\right)\left(Y-\alpha_{2}^{-1}\right) \cdots\left(Y-\alpha_{m}^{-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

we have

$$
p_{t}^{*}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\left(\alpha_{i}^{-1}\right)^{m-1+t}}{F^{\prime}\left(\alpha_{i}^{-1}\right)}
$$

and $p_{-1}^{*}=p_{-2}^{*}=\cdots=p_{-m+1}^{*}=0$.
We conclude that

$$
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} r_{j,-n} X^{n}=k_{m}^{-1} K_{j}(X)\left(1+p_{1}^{*} X+p_{2}^{*} X^{2}+\cdots+p_{t}^{*} X^{t}+\cdots\right)
$$

and this leads to

$$
r_{j,-n}=\left\{\begin{array}{cl}
p_{n}^{*} & \text { if } j=1,  \tag{2.3}\\
-\frac{1}{k_{m}} \sum_{t=0}^{m-j} k_{m-j-t} p_{n-1-t}^{*} & \text { if } j=2, \ldots, m
\end{array}\right.
$$

Instead of using $p_{t}$ (resp. $p_{t}^{*}$ ), one can also use the multinomial theorem from [7] to find $r_{j n}\left(r e s p . ~ r_{j,-n}\right)$. For example, as in [10], we have (within an irrelevant radius of convergence)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} r_{j n} X^{n} \\
& =\left(X^{j-1}+k_{1} X^{j}+\cdots+k_{m-j} X^{m-1}\right)\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}(-1)^{j}\left(k_{1} X+\cdots+k_{m-1} X^{m-1}+k_{m} X^{m}\right)^{j}\right] \\
& =\left(X^{j-1}+k_{1} X^{j}+\cdots+k_{m-j} X^{m-1}\right)\left(\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} A(i) X^{i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
A(i)=\sum(-1)^{t_{1}+t_{2}+\cdots+t_{m}} \frac{\left(t_{1}+t_{2}+\cdots+t_{m}\right)!}{t_{1}!t_{2}!\cdots t_{m}!} k_{1}^{t_{1}} k_{2}^{t_{2}} \ldots k_{m}^{t_{m}}
$$

## ON BERNSTEIN'S COMBINATORIAL IDENTITIES

the last sum being taken over all m-tuples ( $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}$ ) of $\mathbb{N}^{m}$ such that

$$
t_{1}+2 t_{2}+\cdots+m t_{m}=i
$$

therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{j n}=\sum_{t=0}^{m-j} k_{t} A(n-j+1-t), \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the convention $k_{0}=1$, and $A(i)=0$ for $i$ a negative integer.
Similarly, for $j=2, \ldots, m$, we have

$$
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} r_{j,-n} X^{n}=\left(-k_{m-j} X-k_{m-j-1} X^{2}-\cdots-k_{0} X^{m-j+1}\right)\left(\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} B(i) X^{i}\right)
$$

where

$$
B(i)=\sum \frac{(-1)^{t_{1}+t_{2}+\cdots+t_{m}}\left(t_{1}+t_{2}+\cdots+t_{m}\right)!}{k_{m}^{t_{1}+t_{2}+\cdots+t_{m}+1_{1}} t_{1}!t_{2}!\cdots t_{m}!} k_{m-1}^{t_{1}} k_{m-2}^{t_{2}} \cdots k_{1}^{t_{m-1}}
$$

the last sum being taken over all m-tuples $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{m}\right)$ such that

$$
t_{1}+2 t_{2}+\cdots+m t_{m}=i
$$

Defining $B(i)$ to be 0 for $i<0$, we therefore obtain

$$
r_{j,-n}= \begin{cases}k_{m} B(n) & \text { if } j=1,  \tag{2.5}\\ -\sum_{t=0}^{m-j} k_{m-j-t} B(n-1-t) & \text { if } j=2, \ldots, m .\end{cases}
$$

Although formulas (2.4) and (2.5) with $j=1$ may look different from Bernstein's formulas (1.14) and (1.14a) in [3], they are in fact equivalent.

To conclude this section, let us remark that if one wants a formula for the powers $\alpha^{n}$ for $\alpha=a_{1}+\alpha_{2} \omega+\cdots+a_{m} \omega^{m-1}$, one can use the characteristic polynomial of $\alpha$ to write an equation of the form

$$
\alpha^{m}+b_{1} \alpha^{m-1}+\cdots+b_{m}=0,
$$

and apply the above procedure to get the powers of $\alpha$ as functions of the $b_{i}$ 's.

## 3. A GENERAL RESULT

If $\alpha=\sum_{i=1}^{m} a_{i 1} \omega^{i-1} \in \mathbb{Q}(\omega)$ and if, for $j=1, \ldots, m$,

$$
\alpha \omega^{j-1}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} \alpha_{i j} \omega^{i-1}
$$

then $N_{\mathbb{Q}(\omega) / \mathbb{Q}}(\alpha)=\operatorname{det} A$, where $A=\left[\alpha_{i j}\right]$; see $[11]$.
Let us consider the equality

$$
\gamma=\alpha \beta
$$

with $\beta \in \mathbb{Q}(\omega)$ where, for $j=1, \ldots, m$,

$$
\beta \omega^{j-1}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} b_{i j} \omega^{i-1}, \gamma \omega^{j-1}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} g_{i j} \omega^{i-1} ;
$$

taking $B=\left[b_{i j}\right], G=\left[g_{i j}\right], \Omega=\left[\begin{array}{llll}1 & \omega & \cdots & \omega^{m-1}\end{array}\right]$, we have

$$
\alpha \Omega=\Omega A, \beta \Omega=\Omega B, \gamma \Omega=\Omega G \text { and }(\alpha \beta) \Omega=(\beta \alpha) \Omega=\Omega(B A)=\Omega(A B),
$$

hence, the identity

$$
G=A B=B A .
$$

If, for a matrix $M$, we denote its $j^{\text {th }}$ column by $M_{(j)}$, we conclude

$$
\alpha \beta=\gamma=\Omega G_{(1)}=\Omega A B_{(1)}=\Omega B A_{(1)} .
$$

In particular, we obtain $A B_{(1)}=G_{(1)}$, i.e.,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{c}
a_{11} b_{11}+a_{12} b_{21}+\cdots+a_{1 m} b_{m 1}=g_{11} \\
a_{21} b_{11}+a_{22} b_{21}+\cdots+a_{2 m} b_{m 1}=g_{21} \\
\vdots \vdots \\
\vdots \\
a_{m 1} b_{11}+a_{m 2} b_{21}+\cdots+a_{m m} b_{m 1}=g_{m 1}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Let $\alpha \neq 0$; then $N_{Q(\omega) / \mathbb{Q}}(\alpha)=\operatorname{det} A \neq 0$, and the matrix $A$ of the coefficients of the above system has det $A \neq 0$. For $i=1$, ..., $m$, Cramer's rule gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{i_{1}}=\frac{1}{\operatorname{det} A} \sum_{t=1}^{m} g_{t 1} \operatorname{cof}\left(a_{t i}\right) \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\operatorname{cof}\left(\alpha_{t i}\right)$ is the cofactor of the ( $\left.t, i\right)$ element of $A$.
Similarly, if $\beta \neq 0$, we also have, for $i=1, \ldots, m$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{i 1}=\frac{1}{\operatorname{det} B} \sum_{t=1}^{m} g_{t 1} \operatorname{cof}\left(b_{t i}\right) \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

In [2] Bernstein took $m=3, k_{1}=0, k_{2}=g \geqslant 2, k_{3}=-1, \alpha=\omega^{s}, \beta=\omega^{-s}$, $\gamma=1$, obtained recurrence relations for the rational coefficients of $\alpha$ and $\beta$, calculated the generating function of these coefficients, and then obtained his combinatorial identities, which turn out to be special cases of our formulas (3.1) and (3.2); see formulas (4.2) and (4.3) of [2], see also [1], [4], and [5]. The same was done in a lengthy way for arbitrary $m$ in [3]. It turns out that in [3], Bernstein is considering $\alpha=\omega^{m-n+1}, \beta=\alpha^{-1}, \gamma=1$; nevertheless, he forgot to write $a_{0}$ in front of the determinant appearing in his formula (2.3b), so formulas (2.4)-(2.7) must be modified accordingly [e.g., the power of $a_{0}$ in (2.7) is $m$ ].

Let us observe that, from a linear algebra point of view, the equality $G=$ $A B$ with det $A \neq 0$ immediately implies that one can solve for the entries of $B$ in terms of the entries of $G$ and minors of $A$.

## 4. VANDERMONDE MATRIX TREATMENT

Consider the matrix $C$ defined in Section 1 , the Vandermonde matrix $V$, and the diagonal matrix $D$ shown on the following page:

$$
V=\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & \alpha_{1} & \alpha_{1}^{2} & \ldots & \alpha_{1}^{m-1} \\
1 & \alpha_{2} & \alpha_{2}^{2} & \ldots & \alpha_{2}^{m-1} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & & \vdots \\
1 & \alpha_{m} & \alpha_{m}^{2} & \ldots & \alpha_{m}^{m-1}
\end{array}\right], \quad D=\left[\begin{array}{llll}
\alpha_{1} & 0 & \ldots & 0 \\
0 & \alpha_{2} & \ldots & 0 \\
\vdots & \vdots & & \vdots \\
0 & 0 & \ldots & \alpha_{m}
\end{array}\right]
$$

Since $V C=D V$, we have $C=V^{-1} D V$, and

$$
\operatorname{det} V=|V|=\prod_{j>i}\left(\alpha_{j}-\alpha_{i}\right)
$$

It is possible to give an explicit formula for $C$ in terms of det $V$ and in terms of the determinant of a certain matrix that is a1most of the Vandermonde type. Let us do it.

For $t=1, \ldots, m-1$, denote by $k_{t}(j)$ the $t^{\text {th }}$ elementary symmetric function in $\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{j-1}, \alpha_{j+1}, \ldots, \alpha_{m}$, whence

$$
\begin{equation*}
k_{t}(j)=k_{t}+k_{t-1} \alpha_{j}+\cdots+k_{1} \alpha_{j}^{t-1}+\alpha_{j}^{t} . \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

With respect to $V$, define

$$
V_{i}=\operatorname{cof}\left(\alpha_{i}^{m-1}\right)
$$

Then it is well known that

$$
V^{-1}=\frac{1}{|V|}\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
k_{m-1}(1) V_{1} & k_{m-1}(2) V_{2} & \ldots & k_{m-1}(m) V_{m} \\
k_{m-2}(1) V_{1} & k_{m-2}(2) V_{2} & \cdots & k_{m-2}(m) V_{m} \\
\vdots & \vdots & & \vdots \\
k_{1}(1) V_{1} & k_{1}(2) V_{2} & \cdots & k_{1}(m) V_{m} \\
V_{1} & V_{2} & \cdots & V_{m}
\end{array}\right]
$$

(see for instance [9]). For a proof, call $W$ the matrix $|V| V^{-1}$, and show that $W V=|V| I_{m}$ by comparing the $(i, j)$ elements: if $i=j$, you obtain $|V|$; if $j<i$, you get 0 , using (4.1); if $j>i$, you obtain 0 , using the fact that

$$
\alpha_{t}^{j-1} k_{m-i}(t)=-k_{m-i+1} \alpha_{t}^{j-2}-k_{m-i+2} \alpha_{t}^{j-3}-\cdots-k_{m-1} \alpha_{t}^{j-i}-k_{m} \alpha^{j-i-1}
$$

By definition, for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, let $H_{n}$ be given by

$$
H_{n}=\operatorname{det}\left[\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & \alpha_{1} & \cdots & \alpha_{1}^{m-2} & \alpha_{1}^{n-1} \\
1 & \alpha_{2} & \cdots & \alpha_{2}^{m-2} & \alpha_{2}^{n-1} \\
\vdots & \vdots & & \vdots & \vdots \\
1 & \alpha_{m} & \cdots & \alpha_{m}^{m-2} & \alpha_{m}^{n-1}
\end{array}\right] ;
$$

as is easily verified, this determinant $H_{n}$ satisfies the $m^{\text {th }}$-order linear recurrence

$$
H_{n}=-k_{1} H_{n-1}-k_{2} H_{n-2}-\cdots-k_{m} H_{n-m}
$$

## ON BERNSTEIN'S COMBINATORIAL IDENTITIES

Keeping in mind formula (4.1), we find for the ( $j, t$ ) element of $C^{n}=V^{-1} D^{n} V$ (with $1 \leqslant j, t \leqslant m$ ):

$$
(j, t) \text { element of } C^{n}=\frac{1}{|V|} \sum_{i=0}^{m-j} k_{m-j-i} H_{n+t+i} .
$$

So, for every $n \in \mathbb{Z}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{j n}=\frac{1}{|V|} \sum_{i=0}^{m-j} k_{m-j-i} H_{n+1+i} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

## REFERENCES

1. L. Bernstein. "Zeros of the Functions $f(n)=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty}(-1)^{i}\binom{n-2 i}{i^{2 i}} \cdot$ " J. Num-
ber Theory 6, no. 4 (1974):264-270.
2. L. Bernstein. "Zeros of Combinatorial Functions and Combinatorial Identities." Houston J. Math. 2, no. 1 (1976):9-16.
3. L. Bernstein. "Periodic Algorithms and Their Application." Can. J. Math. 31, no. 3 (1979):565-595.
4. L. Bernstein. "Applications of Units." J. Number Theory 10 (1978):354383.
5. L. Bernstein. "An Invariant for Combinatorial Identities." The Fibonacci Quarterly 16, no. 4 (1978):354-369.
6. W. S. Burnside. The Theory of Equations. 7th ed. 2 vols. New York: Dover Publications.
7. G. Chrystal. AZgebra. 6th ed. Vol. II. New York: Chelsea, 1952.
8. B. N. Delone \& D. K. Faddeev. The Theory of Irrationalities of the Third Degree. AMS Translations, Vol. 10, 1964.
9. A. Klinger. "The Vandermonde Matrix." American Math. Monthly 74, no. 5 (1967):571-574.
10. C. Levesque. "On $m^{\text {th }}$ Order Linear Recurrences." The Fibonacci Quarterly 23, no. 4 (1985):290-293.
11. P. Samue1. Théorie algébrique des nombres. Paris: Herman, 1967.

# MULTIPLE OCCURRENCES OF BINOMIAL COEFFICIENTS 

CRAIG A. TOVEY
Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, GA 30332
(Submitted February 1984)

1. INTRODUCTION

How many times can the same number appear in Pascal's triangle? After eliminating occurrences due to symmetry, $\binom{n}{k}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}n \\ n & -k\end{array}\right)$, and the uninteresting occurrences of $1=\binom{n}{0}$ and $n=\binom{n}{1}$, the answer to this question is not clear. More precisely, if $1<k \leqslant n / 2$, we say that $\binom{n}{k}$ is a proper binomial coefficient. Are there integers that can be expressed in different ways as proper binomial coefficients?

Enumeration by hand or with a computer program produces some cases, given in Table 1. The smallest is 120 , which equals
$\binom{10}{3}$ and $\binom{16}{2}$
Table 1. Small Multiple Occurrences of Binomial Coefficients

| INTEGER | BINOMIAL COEFFICIENTS |
| :---: | :---: |
| 120 | $\binom{10}{3},\binom{16}{2}$ |
| 210 | $\binom{10}{4},\binom{21}{2}$ |
| 1540 | $\binom{22}{3},\binom{56}{2}$ |
| 3003 | $\binom{14}{6},\binom{15}{5},\binom{78}{2}$ |
| 7140 | $\binom{36}{3},\binom{120}{2}$ |
| 11628 | $\binom{19}{5},\binom{153}{2}$ |
| 24310 | $\binom{17}{8},\binom{221}{2}$ |

There is even an instance of a number, 3003, which can be expressed in three different ways. No clear pattern emerges; the cases just seem to be sprinkled among the binomial coefficients. We conjecture that, for any $t$, there exist infinitely many integers that may be expressed in $t$ different (proper) ways as binomial coefficients.
[Nov.

Here we prove the conjecture for the case $t=2$. The proof is constructive and depends in an unexpected way on the Fibonacci sequence.
11. THE CONSTRUCTION

We seek solutions to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{n}{k}=\binom{n-1}{k+1}, \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

an especially tractable situation because it leads to a second-order equation. In particular, if (1) holds, then $n(k+1)=(n-k)(n-k-1)$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=n-k-1 \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $x(x+1)=n(n-x)$ so $n^{2}-x n-\left(x^{2}+x\right)=0$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
n=\frac{x+\sqrt{5 x^{2}+4 x}}{2} \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

(since $n$ is positive). Integer solutions to (3) therefore lead to integer solutions to (1).

Since $5 x^{2}+4 x$ is even if and only if $x$ is even, this means we must find integers $x$ such that $5 x^{2}+4 x$ is a perfect square. Now $x$ and $5 x+4$ have no common factors except possibly 2 or 4 , so a natural slightly stronger condition would be that both $x$ and $5 x+4$ be perfect squares. In other words, we need to find integers $z$ such that $5 z^{2}+4$ is a perfect square. These are given by the following lemma.

Lemma 1: Let $F_{j}$ denote the Fibonacci sequence. Then, for all $j$,

$$
\left(F_{j-1}+F_{j+1}\right)^{2}-5 F_{j}^{2}=4(-1)^{j}
$$

Proof: A straightforward calculation (see, e.g., [2], pp. 148-149) shows

$$
\left(F_{j+1}+F_{j-1}\right)^{2}-5 F_{j}^{2}=4\left(F_{j-1}^{2}+F_{j} F_{j-1}-F_{j}^{2}\right)=-4\left(F_{j}^{2}+F_{j+1} F_{j}-F_{j+1}^{2}\right),
$$

which yields the result by induction.
The lemma tells us that for any $j$ even, $z=F_{j}$ gives the perfect square

$$
5 z^{2}+4=\left(F_{j-1}+F_{j+1}\right)^{2}
$$

This completes the construction.
Theorem 1: Let $F_{j}$ denote the Fibonacci sequence. Then, for any even $j$, there exists a solution to (1), where $x=F_{j}^{2}$ and $n$ and $k$ are given by (2) and (3).

Remark: Letting $L_{j}$ denote the Lucas sequence as usual, we can write this solution as

$$
n=\frac{F_{j} L_{j}+F_{j}^{2}}{2}, \quad k=\frac{F_{j} L_{j}-F_{j}^{2}}{2}-1
$$

Theorem 2: Theorem 1 gives all solutions to (1).
Proof: It follows from the preceding discussion that any solution to (1) corresponds via (2) to some integer $x$ such that $5 x^{2}+4 x$ is a perfect square. Let $a$ (resp. $b$ ) be the number of times 2 divides $5 x+4$ (resp. $x$ ). If $\alpha>2$, then
$b=2$ and, conversely, $b>2$ implies $a=2$. Since $5 x+4$ and $x$ have no common factors except (possibly) 2 or $4,(5 x+4) / 2^{a}$ is a perfect square, as is $x / 2^{b}$. Therefore, $a+b$ is even, so $a$ and $b$ are both even or both odd. In the former case, $x$ and $5 x+4$ are perfect squares. We claim this leads precisely to the class of solutions given by Theorem 1. In the latter case, it follows that $a=b=1$. Thus, we seek integers $z$ such that $5 z^{2}+2$ is a perfect square. We further claim that no such integers exist. The two claims can be shown to follows from the general theory of the so-called Pell equation (see, for example, [1] for the first claim, and [3, pp. 350-358] for the second claim). For completeness, we give a simple proof that does not rely on the general theory.

Let $\left\{A_{n}\right\}$ denote any sequence of positive numbers satisfying the recurrence $A_{n}+A_{n+1}=A_{n+2}$. The argument from Lemma 1 shows that, for all $n$,

$$
\left(A_{n-1}+A_{n+1}\right)^{2}-5 A_{n}^{2}=4\left(A_{n-1}^{2}+A_{n-1} A_{n}-A_{n}^{2}\right)=-\left(A_{n}+A_{n+2}\right)^{2}+5 A_{n+1}^{2}
$$

Therefore, given any solution $z, y$ to $5 z^{2}+k=y^{2}$, we can construct smaller solutions by setting

$$
A_{i}=z, \quad A_{i-1}=\frac{y-z}{2}, \quad A_{i+1}=\frac{y+z}{2}
$$

and extending the sequence $\left\{A_{n}\right\}$ backward according to the recurrence

$$
A_{n}+A_{n+1}=A_{n+2}
$$

[The solutions will be $z=A_{j}, y=A_{j-1}+A_{j+1}$, where $j \equiv i(\bmod 2)$, with

$$
\left.|k|=4\left|A_{n}+A_{n} A_{n+1}^{2}-A_{n+1}^{2}\right|, \text { for all } n \cdot\right]
$$

Now, let $(z, y)$ be any integer solution to $5 z^{2}+4=y^{2}$. Set

$$
A_{i}=z \quad \text { and } \quad A_{i+1}=\frac{y+z}{2} \quad \text { (an integer) }
$$

Then extend $\left\{A_{n}\right\}$ backward to get the solution corresponding to $A_{i-2}$ and $A_{i-1}$. If $z \geqslant 3$, then

$$
.61 z \leqslant \frac{z \sqrt{5}-z}{2} \leqslant A_{i-1}=\frac{y-z}{2} \leqslant \frac{z \sqrt{5}+.5-z}{2} \leqslant .72 z
$$

whence $.28 z \leqslant A_{i-2} \leqslant .39 z$. Therefore, if $A_{i} \geqslant 3$, the solution corresponding to $A_{i-2}$ is smaller. Repeatedly extend $\left\{A_{n}\right\}$ backward until $A_{j}<3$. Since the only such integer solution is $(1,3), z$ must have been a Fibonacci Number. This verifies the first claim. The second claim, that $5 z^{2}+2=y^{2}$ has no solutions, follows immediately from the fact that $y^{2} \equiv 2$ (mod 5) has none.

## REFERENCES

1. I. Gessel. Advanced Problem H-187. The Fibonacci Quarterly 10 (1972):417419.
2. G. H. Hardy \& E. M. Wright. An Introduction to the Theory of Numbers. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1959.
3. J. Uspensky \& M. Heaslet. Elementary Number Theory. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1939.

## Linear recurrence relations with binomial coefficients

MICHAEL FRENKLACH
The Pennsylvania State University, University Park, PA 16802
(Submitted March 1984)
A linear recurrence relation of the $n^{\text {th }}$ order is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{i+n}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{j} T_{i+n-j}, \quad i=0,1,2, \ldots \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, a_{n}$ are given coefficients. When all the coefficients are set equal to 1 , the relation generates $t$-Fibonacci sequences [1], the Fibonacci sequence for $n=2$, the Tribonacci sequence for $n=3$ [2], and so on.

Another case arises when the coefficients in relation (1) are set equal to binomial coefficients, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{i+n}=\sum_{j=1}^{n}\binom{n-1}{j-1} T_{i+n-j} . \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $n=2$, relation (2) is reduced to the Fibonacci sequence and the recurring sequences generated by the recurrence relations with binomial coefficients (2) can be considered as another generalization of the Fibonacci sequence. These "binomial" sequences interest the author because of their relation to the dynamic development of self-replicating biochemical systems [3].

Consider self-replication of the type shown in Figure 1, i.e.,
$A_{1} \xrightarrow{k_{1}} A_{2}+A_{1}$
$A_{j} \xrightarrow{k_{j}} A_{j+1}, \quad j=2, \ldots, n-1$,
$A_{n} \xrightarrow{k_{n}} A_{1}$


Figure 1. A Schematic Diagram of a Self-Replicating Process

## LINEAR RECURRENCE RELATIONS WITH BINOMIAL COEFFICIENTS

Species $A_{1}$ forms species $A_{2}$ while reproducing itself in reaction (R1). Species $A_{2}$ undergoes $n-1$ transformations by reactions (R2)-(Rn) producing in the last step of this sequence the initial species $A_{1}$. Assume the first-order massaction law for each of the reactions, that is, the rate of the $j$ th reaction is proportional to the concentration of species $A_{j}$, and also assume that the rate coefficients are identical, i.e., $k_{j}=k$ for $j=1,2, \ldots, n$, the differential equations which describe the kinetics of the system take the form

$$
\frac{d\left[A_{1}\right]}{d t}=k\left[A_{n}\right], \quad \frac{d\left[A_{j}\right]}{d t}=k\left[A_{j-1}\right]-k\left[A_{j}\right], \quad j=2, \ldots, n,
$$

with initial conditions

$$
\begin{aligned}
& {\left[A_{1}\right]_{t=0}=C_{0},} \\
& {\left[A_{j}\right]_{t=0}=0, \quad j=2,3, \ldots, n,}
\end{aligned}
$$

where:
[ $A_{j}$ ] is the concentration of species $A_{j}$; $C_{0}$ is the initial concentration of species $A_{1}$; $t$ is time.

Dividing both sides of each differential equation by $k C_{0}$ and introducing dimensionless variables

$$
a_{j}=[A]_{j} / C_{0} \quad \text { for } j=1,2, \ldots, n
$$

and $\quad \tau=k t$,
these equations can be rewritten as

$$
\frac{d a_{1}}{d \tau}=a_{n}, \quad \frac{d a_{j}}{d \tau}=a_{j-1}-a_{j}, \quad j=2, \ldots, n,
$$

with initial conditions

$$
\left.a_{j}\right|_{\tau=0}=\delta_{1 j} .
$$

The characteristic equation for this system of differential equations is

$$
\begin{equation*}
r(r+1)^{n-1}-1=0 \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, the roots of (3) determine the kinetics of the reaction sequence.
Returning to the "binomial" sequence (2), the auxiliary polynomial for this sequence is

$$
\begin{equation*}
x^{n}-\sum_{j=1}^{n}\binom{n-1}{j-1} x^{n-j}=0 \quad \text { or } \quad x^{n}-(x+1)^{n-1}=0 \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Defining $r=1 / x$, (4) becomes (3). Analysis of the "binomial" sequences and their relations can provide information necessary for understanding self-replication of the type considered here. It would be of interest to determine all possible relationships between the roots of equation (4) and their dependence on the order $n$.

For example, defining $z=r+1$, equation (3) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
z^{n}-z^{n-1}-1=0 \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equation (5) and its solution are discussed in a number of articles [4]-[7]. From the results of Ferguson [6] and Hoggatt \& Alladi [7], the following conclusions can be made for roots of equation (3):

Property 1: For all $n$, there exists only one positive real root $r_{1}$-the dominant root of (3)-such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{1}=1 / \phi_{n} \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{n}=\lim _{i \rightarrow \infty} \frac{T_{i+1}}{T_{i}} \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

is the limiting ration of the "binomial" sequence of the $n^{\text {th }}$ order.
Proof: It was proven in [6] and [7] that (5) has a single positive root with largest absolute value, $\lambda_{1}$. That is, $\lambda_{1}$ is the dominant root of (5). Since $r=z-1, r_{1}=\lambda_{1}-1$ is the dominant root of (3). Furthermore, since $x=$ $1 /(z-1)$, (4) has only one positive real root, $x_{1}=1 /\left(\lambda_{1}-1\right)$. Root $x_{1}$ has the largest absolute value: It was proven in [6] that $\lambda_{1}-1 \leqslant|z-1|$; therefore

$$
\frac{1}{\lambda_{1}-1} \geqslant \frac{1}{|z-1|} \quad \text { or } \quad x_{1} \geqslant|x| .
$$

Thus, there exists a single root of largest absolute value for (4); this satisfies the condition of the lemma in [7], proving the existence of limit (7) and that $x_{1}=\phi_{n}$. Equation (6) follows from $x_{1}=\phi_{n}$ and $r_{1}=1 / x_{1}$.

Property 2: For $n$ even, there is also one negative real root.
Proof: This follows from applying Descartes' Rule of Signs to equation (5) and using the relationship $r=z-1$.

Property 3: $\quad \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} r_{1}=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left(1 / \phi_{n}\right)=0$.
Proof: This follows from $r_{1}=\lambda_{1}-1$ and the result of Theorem B in [6] that $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \lambda_{1}=1$.

Property 4: All the roots are distinct and lie in the intersection of the two annuli

$$
\lambda_{0} \leqslant\left|r_{j}+1\right| \leqslant r_{1}+1 \quad \text { and } \quad r_{1} \leqslant\left|r_{j}\right| \leqslant 1+\lambda_{0},
$$

where $r_{j}, j=2,3, \ldots, n$, are the (complex) roots of equation (3) and $\lambda_{0}$ is the largest real solution of $u^{n}+u^{n-1}-1=0\left(0<\lambda_{0}<1<r_{1}+1<2\right)$.

Proof: These results follow from Theorem A in [6] and $r=z-1$.
Species concentrations $\alpha_{j}$ are determined by linear combinations of $n$ exponential terms $e^{r_{\ell} \tau}$, where $r_{l}(\ell=1,2, \ldots, n)$ are the roots of (3). Based on properties (1)-(4) above, the dynamic behavior of reaction system (R1)-(Rn) is dominated by the term $e^{r_{1} \tau}\left(=e^{\tau / \phi_{n}}\right)$. At $n \geqslant 14$ there are complex roots $r_{\ell}$ with positive real parts (e.g., $0.00617 \pm 0.38302 i$ ), thus indicating the appearance
of nondecaying, oscillatory components in the concentration profiles. The exponential term for a complex root takes the form $e^{\alpha \tau} e^{\beta \tau i}$, where $r=\alpha+\beta i$. The term $e^{\beta \tau i}$ indicates oscillatory behavior of species concentrations in time. If $\alpha$ is negative, oscillations are decaying with increase in $\tau$. For $\alpha>0$, the oscillatory behavior is nondecaying. More detailed general analysis of the reaction kinetics depends on whether the roots of (3) and their dependence on $n$ can be isolated further. Thus, it would be of interest to determine the frequencies and amplitudes of oscillatory components in concentration profiles.

The following recurrence expression,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\log \phi_{n}}{\log \phi_{n-1}} \approx \frac{\log n}{\log (n-1)} \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

seems to be an approximate relationship between the limiting ratios (or the dominant roots) of different orders (see Figure 2). Since the dominant root of (3) is specified by $\phi_{n}$, namely $r_{1}=1 / \phi_{n}$, and the dominant root determines the main dynamic behavior of the reaction system, relationship (8) can be used to approximate such behavior. A question is: Can relationship (8) be justified and can it be improved?


Figure 2. Logarithmic Dependence of the Limiting Ratio of the "Binomial" Sequence on the Order of the Sequence

The following proof that $\log \phi_{n} / \log n$ is bounded was suggested by the reviewer.
[Nov.

## LINEAR RECURRENCE RELATIONS WITH BINOMIAL COEFFICIENTS

Conjecture: $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \phi_{n}}{\log n}$ exists.
From $y=(1+(1 / y))^{n}$, where $y \equiv \phi_{n}$ and $1<y<n$, we have
$\log y<\log n \quad$ and $\log \phi_{n}<\log n \quad$ or $\quad \frac{\log \phi_{n}}{\log n}<1$ is bounded.
For large $n$, also,

$$
y=\left(1+\frac{n / y}{n}\right)^{n} \lesssim e^{n / y} \text { or } \log y+\log \log y<\log n
$$

or
$\frac{\log y}{\log n}+\frac{\log \log y}{\log n} \leqq 1$.
It may be that $\log \phi_{n} / \log n$ is eventually monotonically increasing. A short computer program shows, however, that it is not monotone at first.

## ACKNOWLEDGMENT

The author would like to acknolwedge interesting and stimulating discussions with W. C. Gardiner, Jr., and H. R. P. Ferguson.

## REFERENCES

1. W. C. Lynch. "The t-Fibonacci Numbers and Polyphase Sorting." The Fibonacci Quarterly 8 (1970):6-22.
2. M. Feinberg. "Fibonacci-Tribonacci." The Fibonacci Quarterly 1 (1963):7174.
3. C. K. Bierbricher, M. Eigen, \& W. C. Gardiner, Jr. "Kinetics of RNA Replication." Biochemistry 22 (1983):2544-2559.
4. J. A. Raab. "A Generalization of the Connection between the Fibonacci Sequence and Pascal's Triangle." The Fibonacci Quarterly 1 (1963):21-31.
5. V. C. Harris \& C. C. Styles. "A Generalization of Fibonacci Numbers." The Fibonacci Quarterly 2 (1964):277-289.
6. H. R. P. Ferguson. "On a Generalization of the Fibonacci Numbers Useful in Memory Allocation Schema; or All about the Zeroes of $Z^{k}-Z^{k-1}-1, k>0 . "$ The Fibonacci Quarterly 14 (1976):233-243.
7. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& K. Alladi. "Limiting Ratios of Convolved Recursive Sequences." The Fibonacci Quarterly 15 (1977):211-214.

# THE SERIES OF PRIME SQUARE RECIPROCALS <br> HANS HERDA <br> University of Massachusetts at Boston, MA 02125 <br> (Submitted May 1984) 

The series

$$
\left.\sum_{p} 1 / p^{2} \quad \text { (the sum being extended over all primes } p\right)
$$

converges very slowly. Fortunately, the convergence can be quickened:
Lemma: $\quad \sum_{p} 1 / p^{2}=\sum_{k \geqslant 1} \frac{\mu(k)}{k} \log (\zeta(2 k))$.
Proof: First,

$$
\log (\zeta(2 k))=\log \prod_{p}\left(1-\left(1 / p^{2 k}\right)\right)^{-1}
$$

by ([1], p. 246, Theorem 280).

$$
\begin{aligned}
\log \prod_{p}\left(1-\left(1 / p^{2 k}\right)\right)^{-1} & =\sum_{p}-\log \left(1-\left(1 / p^{2 k}\right)\right)=\sum_{p} \sum_{s \geqslant 1} \frac{1}{s p^{2 k s}} \\
& =\sum_{s \geqslant 1} \frac{1}{s} \sum_{p} \frac{1}{p^{2 k s}}
\end{aligned}
$$

We note the following for later use:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log (\zeta(2 k))=\sum_{s \geqslant 1} \frac{1}{s} \sum_{p} \frac{1}{p^{2 k s}} \tag{*}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{k \geqslant 1} \frac{\mu(k)}{k} \log (\zeta(2 k)) & =\sum_{p} \sum_{k \geqslant 1} \sum_{s \geqslant 1} \frac{\mu(k)}{k s} \cdot \frac{1}{p^{2 k s}}=\sum_{p} \sum_{n \geqslant 1} \sum_{k \mid n} \mu(k) \cdot \frac{1}{n p^{2 n}} \\
& =\sum_{p} \sum_{n \geqslant 1} \frac{1}{n p^{2 n}} \sum_{k \mid n} \mu(k)=\sum_{p} \frac{1}{p^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

the last equality by ([1], p. 235, Theorem 263).
To compute $\sum_{p} 1 / p^{2}$ accurately (to 28 decimal places), we calculate the first seven terms in the Lemma using exact values for the relevant arguments of the zeta function $\zeta$ (computed from [2], p. 298, Table 54, and p. 40, 2.), and we approximate the next twenty-four terms using ( $\%$ ). Thus, we obtain

AMS 1980 Mathematics Subject Classification: 10A40, 65B10.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{p} \frac{1}{p^{2}} \approx \log \left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{6}\right) & -\frac{1}{2} \log \left(\frac{\pi^{4}}{90}\right)-\frac{1}{3} \log \left(\frac{\pi^{6}}{945}\right)-\frac{1}{5} \log \left(\frac{\pi^{10}}{93555}\right)+\frac{1}{6} \log \left(\frac{691 \pi^{12}}{638512875}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{7} \log \left(\frac{2 \pi^{14}}{18243225}\right)+\frac{1}{10} \log \left(\frac{174611 \pi^{20}}{1531329465290625}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{11}\left\{\left(2^{-22}+3^{-22}+5^{-22}+\cdots+23^{-22}\right)\right. \\
& \left.+\frac{1}{2}\left(2^{-44}+3^{-44}\right)+\frac{1}{3}\left(2^{-66}\right)+\frac{1}{4}\left(2^{-88}\right)\right\} \cdots \\
& +\frac{1}{46}\left(2^{-92}\right)-\frac{1}{47}\left(2^{-94}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Our computer, when presented with this, answers:
$\sum_{p} \frac{1}{p^{2}} \approx 0.4522474200410654985065433649$.
It is easy to see that the Lemma holds not only for the exponent 2 , but for all exponents $t>1$. Hence,

$$
(\forall t>1) \sum_{k \geqslant 1} \frac{\pi(k)-\pi(k-1)}{k^{t}}-\sum_{k \geqslant 1} \frac{\mu(k)}{k} \log (\zeta(t k)) .
$$

## REFERENCES

1. G. H. Hardy \& E. M. Wright. An Introduction to the Theory of Numbers. 4th ed. London: Oxford University Press, 1960.
2. Jahnke-Emde-Loesch. Tables of Higher Functions. 6th ed. New York: McGrawHill, 1960.

# COMBINATORIAL PROOF FOR A SORTING PROBLEM IDENTITY 

C. A. CHURCH, JR.<br>University of North Carolina, Greensboro, NC 27412<br>(Submitted June 1984)

1. In [2], L. Carlitz suggests that a combinatorial proof of the relation

$$
\begin{align*}
H(m, n, p)-H(m-1, n, p) & -H(m, n-1, p)-H(m, n, p-1) \\
& =\binom{m+n}{n}\binom{n+p}{p}\binom{p+m}{m} \tag{1.1}
\end{align*}
$$

might be interesting, where

$$
\begin{align*}
& H(m, n, p)=\sum_{i=0}^{m} \sum_{j=0}^{n} \sum_{k=0}^{p}\binom{i+j}{j}\binom{m-i+n-j}{n-j}\binom{j+k}{k} \\
& \cdot\binom{n-j+p-k}{p-k}\binom{p-k+i}{i}\binom{m-i+k}{k} . \tag{1.2}
\end{align*}
$$

We give such a proof.
By a lattice point is meant a point with integral coordinates. By a path is meant a minimal path via lattice points, taking unit horizontal and vertical steps. Unless stated otherwise, only nonnegative integers will be used.
2. To fix the idea, we first give the proof of Brock's original problem [1]; i.e., to show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(m, n)-H(m-1, n)-H(m, n-1)=\binom{m+n}{n}^{2}, \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(m, n)=\sum_{i=0}^{m} \sum_{j=0}^{n}\binom{i+j}{j}\binom{m-i+n-j}{n-j}\binom{n-j+i}{i}\binom{m-i+j+j}{j} \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Figure 1 , the number of paths from ( 0,0 ) to $(m, n)$ via ( $i, j$ ) and then from ( $m, n$ ) to $(m+n, n+m)$ via $(m+n-j, n+i)$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{i+j}{j}\binom{m-i+n-j}{n-j}\binom{m-i+j}{j}\binom{n-j+i}{i} . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Summed over $i=0,1, \ldots, m$ and $j=0,1, \ldots, n,(2.3)$ gives $H(m, n) . H(m, n)$ counts all the paths from $(0,0)$ to $(m+n, n+m)$ via $(m, n)$, but the paths are counted more than once.

For given $i$ and $j$, each path from $(0,0)$ to $(m+n, n+m)$ via ( $m, n$ ) that passes over the segment joining ( $i, j$ ) and $(i+1, j$ ) is counted at $(i, j)$ and again at $(i+1, j)$. The same is true for each path from ( $m, n$ ) to ( $m+n$, $n+m$ ) that passes over the segment joining $(m+n-j, n+i)$ and $(m+n-j$, $n+i+1)$. The number of such paths is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{i+j}{j}\binom{m-i-1+n-j}{n-j}\binom{m-i-1+j}{j}\binom{n-j+i}{i} \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Summed over $i=0,1, \ldots, m-1$ and $j=0,1, \ldots, n,(2.4)$ gives $H(m-1, n)$.


Figure 1
Similarly, $H(m, n-1)$ is obtained by considering those paths that pass over the segment joining $(i, j)$ and $(i, j+1)$ and the segment joining $(m+n-$ $j-1, n+i)$ and $(m+n-j, n+i)$ for $j=0,1, \ldots, n-1$. Alternatively, interchange $m$ and $n$ (and $i$ and $j$ ) in the argument for $H(m-1, n)$.

Thus the left member of (2.1) counts each path from ( 0,0 ) to ( $m+n, n+m$ ) via ( $m, n$ ) exactly once. But the right member of (2.1) is just the number of such paths.
3. We now give the proof for (1.1).

By Figure 2, the number of paths from $(0,0)$ to ( $m, n$ ) via ( $i, j$ ), from $(m, n)$ to $(m+n, n+p)$ via $(m+j, n+k)$, and from $(m+n, n+p)$ to $(m+$ $n+p, n+p+m)$ via $(m+n+p-k, n+p+i)$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{i+j}{j}\binom{m-i+n-j}{n-j}\binom{j+k}{k}\binom{n-j+p-k}{p-k}\binom{p-k+i}{i}\binom{m-i+k}{k} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 2

Sum (3.1) over $i=0,1, \ldots, m ; j=0,1, \ldots, n$; and $k=0,1, \ldots, p$ to get $H(m, n, p) . H(m, n, p)$ counts all the paths from $(0,0)$ to $(m+n+p, n+$ $p+m)$ via $(m, n)$ and $(m+n, n+p)$. Again the paths are counted more than once.

For given $i, j, k$, each path that passes over the segment joining ( $i, j$ ) and $(i+1, j)$ is counted at $(i, j)$ and again at $(i+1, j)$. The same is true along the segment joining $(m+n+p-k, n+p+i)$ and $(m+n+p-k, n+$ $p+i+1)$. The number of such paths is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{i+j}{j}\binom{m-i-1+n-j}{n-j}\binom{j+k}{k}\binom{n-j+p-k}{p-k}\binom{p-k+i}{i}\binom{m-i-1+k}{k} \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Summing (3.2) over permissible values of $i, j$, and $k$, we get $H(m-1, n, p)$.
$H(m, n-1, p)$ is obtained by counting the paths that pass over the segment joining $(i, j)$ and $(i, j+1)$ and that joining $(m+j, n+k)$ and $(m+j+1$, $n+k)$.
$H(m, n, p-1)$ is obtained by counting the paths that pass over the segment joining $(m+j, n+k)$ and $(m+j, n+k+1)$ and that joining $(m+n+p-k$, $n+p+i)$ and $(m+n+p-k-1, n+p+i)$.

Thus, the left member of (1.1) counts each path from ( 0,0 ) to ( $m+n+p$, $n+p+m)$ via $(m, n)$ and $(m+n, n+p)$. However, the right member of (1.1) is just that.

## REFERENCES

1. Problem 60-2. SIAM Review 4 1962):396-398.
2. L. Carlitz. "A Binomial Identity Arising from a Sorting Problem." SIAM Review 6 (1964):20-30.

## A FIBONACCI AND LUCAS TANNENBAUM

ARTHUR BARRY \& STANLEY BEZUSZKA, S.J.
Boston College Mathematics Institute, Chestnut Hill, MA 02167
(Submitted October 1984)

The first 53 Fibonacci numbers expressed in base two are used for the Tannenbaum display. The right side of the display is a mirror image of the left side. The squares are $1^{\prime}$ s and the dots are $0^{\prime}$ s. Only the ending 11 digits of the Fibonacci numbers are given for the last six Fibonacci numbers in the Tannenbaum.

We hope that this whimsical display will prompt others to experiment with the artistic use of Fibonacci and Lucas numbers. The displays can also be done in various colors for striking and unusual effects.


FIGURE OF LUCAS TANNENBAUM


# ELEMENTARY PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS 

## Edited by

A. P. HILLMAN

Assistant Editors
GLORIA C. PADILLA and CHARLES R. WALL

Please send all communications regarding ELEMENTARY PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS to PROFESSOR A. P. HILLMAN; 709 Solano Dr., S.E.: Albuquerque, NM 87108. Each solution or problem should be on a separate sheet (or sheets). Preference will be given to those typed with double spacing in the format used below. Solutions should be received within four months of the publication date. Proposed problems should be accompanied by their solutions.

## DEFINITIONS

The Fibonacci numbers $F_{n}$ and the Lucas numbers $L_{n}$ satisfy
and

$$
F_{n+2}=F_{n+1}+F_{n}, F_{0}=0, F_{1}=1
$$

$L_{n+2}=L_{n+1}+L_{n}, L_{0}=2, L_{1}=1$.
Also, $\alpha$ and $\beta$ designate the roots $(1+\sqrt{5}) / 2$ and $(1-\sqrt{5}) / 2$, respectively, of $x^{2}-x-1=0$.

PROBLEMS PROPOSED IN THIS ISSUE
B-556 Proposed by Valentina Bakinova, Rondout Valley, NY
State and prove the general result illustrated by

$$
4^{2}=16,34^{2}=1156,334^{2}=111556,3334^{2}=11115556
$$

B-557 Proposed by Imre Merényi, Cluj, Romania
Prove that there is no integer $n \geqslant 2$ such that

$$
F_{3 n-6} F_{3 n-3} F_{3 n+3} F_{3 n+6}-F_{n-2} F_{n-1} F_{n+1} F_{n+2}=1985^{8}+1
$$

B-558 Proposed by Imre Merényi, Cluj, Romania
Prove that there are no positive integers $m$ and $n$ such that

$$
F_{4 m}^{2}-F_{3 n}-4=0
$$

B-559 Proposed by László Cseh, Cluj, Romania
Let $a=(1+\sqrt{5}) / 2$. For positive integers $n$, prove that

$$
[a+.5]+\left[a^{2}+.5\right]+\cdots+\left[a^{n}+.5\right]=L_{n+2}-2
$$

where $[x]$ denotes the greatest integer in $x$.

B-560 Proposed by László Cseh, Cluj, Romania
Let $a$ and $[x]$ be as in B-559. Prove that

$$
\left[a F_{1}+.5\right]+\left[a^{2} F_{2}+.5\right]+\cdots+\left[a^{n} F_{n}+.5\right]
$$

is always a Fibonacci number.
B-561 Proposed by Piero Filipponi, Fdn. U. Bordoni, Rome, Italy
(i) Let $Q$ be the matrix $\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0\end{array}\right)$. For all integers $n$, show that $Q^{n}+(-1)^{n} Q^{-n}=L_{n} I$, where $I=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$.
(ii) Find a square root of $Q$, i.e., a matrix $A$ with $A^{2}=Q$.

## SOLUTIONS

Double Product of 4 Consecutive Fibonacci Numbers
B-532 Proposed by Herta T. Freitag, Roanoke, VA
Find $a, b$, and $c$ in terms of $n$ so that

$$
a^{3}(b-c)+b^{3}(c-a)+c^{3}(a-b)=2 F_{n} F_{n+1} F_{n+2} F_{n+3} .
$$

Solution by Graham Lord, Princeton, NJ
The cyclic expression on the left-hand side factors into

$$
-(a-b)(b-c)(c-a)(a+b+c)
$$

The equality is quickly verified when $a=F_{n+1}, b=F_{n+2}$, and $c=F_{n+3}$.
Also solved by Wray Brady, PaulS. Bruckman, L. Cseh, L. A. G. Dresel, L. Kuipers, I. Merényi, Bob Prielipp, Sahib Singh, M. Wachtel, and the proposer.

Product of 5 Fibonacci Numbers
B-533 Proposed by Herta T. Freitag, Roanoke, VA
Let
$g(a, b, c)=a^{4}\left(b^{2}-c^{2}\right)+b^{4}\left(c^{2}-a^{2}\right)+c^{4}\left(a^{2}-b^{2}\right)$.
Determine an infinitude of choices for $a, b$, and $c$ such that $g(a, b, c)$ is the product of five Fibonacci numbers.

Solution by Graham Lord, Princeton, NJ
The cyclic expression on the left-hand side factors into

$$
-\left(b^{2}-c^{2}\right)\left(c^{2}-a^{2}\right)\left(a^{2}-b^{2}\right)
$$

With $a=F_{n}, b=F_{n+1}$, and $c=F_{n+2}$, this becomes $F_{n-1} F_{n} F_{n+2} F_{n+3} F_{2 n}$.
Also solved by Wray Brady, PaulS. Bruckman, L. Cseh, L. A. G. Dresel, L. Kuipers, Bob Prielipp, Sahib Singh, M. Wachtel, and the proposer.

## ELEMENTARY PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS

## No Pythagorean Triangle with Square Area

B-534 Proposed by A. B. Patel, India
One obtains the lengths of the sides of a Pythagorean triangle by letting $a=u^{2}-v^{2}, \quad b=2 u v, \quad c=u^{2}+v^{2}$,
where $u$ and $v$ are integers with $u>v>0$. Prove that the area of such a triangle is not a perfect square when $u=F_{n+1}, v=F_{n}$, and $n \geqslant 2$.
I. Solution by L.A. G. Dresel, University of Reading, England

We have

$$
a=(u-v)(u+v)=\left(F_{n+1}-F_{n}\right)\left(F_{n+1}+F_{n}\right)=F_{n-1} F_{n+2}
$$

and the area is given by $A=\frac{1}{2} \alpha b=F_{n-1} F_{n} F_{n+1} F_{n+2}$. Also,

$$
F_{n-1} F_{n+2}=F_{n} \cdot F_{n+1}+(-1)^{n}
$$

It follows that the area $A$ is the product of two consecutive integers, and thus cannot be a perfect square if $F_{n-1}>0$, i.e., $n \geqslant 2$. In fact,

$$
A=a(a+1) \text { when } n \text { is odd, }
$$

and $\quad A=a(a-1)$ when $n$ is even.
II. Solution by L. Cseh (Cluj, Romania), J. M. Metzger (Grand Forks, ND), Bob Prielipp (Oshkosh, WI), Sahib Singh (Clarion, PA), and Lawrence Somer (Washington, D.C.), independently.

It is well known that the area of a Pythagorean triangle with integral sides is never a perfect square. For proof, see page 256 of Elementary Number Theory by David M. Burton (1980 edition). Thus, this result is true, in general, and therefore independent of involvement of Fibonacci numbers.

Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman, Piero Filipponi, Walther Janous, K. Klauser, L. Kuipers, I. Merényi, M. Wachtel, Tad White, and the proposer.

Impossible Sum
B-535 Proposed by L. Cseh \& I. Merényi, Cluj, Romania
Prove that there is no positive integer $n$ for which

$$
F_{1}+F_{2}+F_{3}+\cdots+F_{3 n}=16!
$$

Solution by L.A. G. Dresel, University of Reading, England
We have the identity $F_{1}+F_{2}+F_{3}+\cdots+F_{3 n}=F_{3 n+2}-1$, and it remains to prove that there is no integer $n$ for which $F_{3 n+2}-1 \xlongequal[1]{=}$ ! If there were such an integer $n$, then, since Wilson's theorem gives
$16!\equiv-1 \quad(\bmod 17)$
we would require

$$
F_{3 n+2} \equiv 0 \quad(\bmod 17) .
$$

Now, the first Fibonacci number divisible by 17 is $F_{9}=34$, and therefore $F_{m}$
is divisible by 17 if and only if 9 divides $m$. Clearly, there is no integer $n$ for which $3 n+2$ is divisible by 9 , and the result follows.

Also solved by PaulS. Bruckman, Piero Filipponi, Walther Janous, Bob Prielipp, Sahib Singh, J. Suck, and the proposer.

## Diophantine Equation

B-536 Proposed by L. Kuipers, Sierre, Switzerland
Find all solutions in integers $x$ and $y$ of

$$
x^{4}+2 x^{3}+2 x^{2}+x+1=y^{2} .
$$

Solution by Paul S. Bruckman, Fair Oaks, CA
If we make the substitution

$$
\begin{equation*}
w=1+2 x+2 x^{2}, \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

the given equation is transformed to the simpler one,

$$
\begin{equation*}
4 y^{2}-w=3 \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $(2 y-w)(2 y+w)=3$, which has only the four solutions:

$$
(\omega, y)=(1,1),(-1,1),(-1,-1),(1,-1) .
$$

Setting $w=1$ in (1) yields $2 x(x+1)=0$, which implies $x=0$ or $x=-1$. This yields four solutions ( $x, y$ ), given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x, y)=(0,1),(0,-1),(-1,1),(-1,-1) \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, setting $w=-1$ in (1) yields $x^{2}+x+1=0$, which is impossible for integral $x$ (the solutions being the complex cube roots of unity). Thus, all the integer solutions of the original equation are given by (3).

Also solved by L. Cseh, L.A. G. Dresel, Walther Janous, L. Kuipers, J. M. Metzger, Bob Prielipp, Sahib Singh, J. Suck, M. Wachtel, and the proposer.

Another Diophantine Equation
B-537 Proposed by L. Kuipers, Sierre, Switzerland
Find all solutions in integers $x$ and $y$ of

$$
x^{4}+3 x^{3}+3 x^{2}+x+1=y^{2} .
$$

Solution by John Oman \& Bob Prielipp, University of Wisconsin-Oshkosh, WI
We shall show that the only solutions $(x, y)$ in integers of the given equation are $(0,1),(0,-1),(1,3),(1,-3),(-1,1),(-1,-1),(-3,5)$, and $(-3,-5)$.

It is easily seen that $(x, y)$ is a solution if and only if ( $x,-y$ ) is a solution. Hence, it suffices to find all solutions ( $x, y$ ) in integers of the given equation where $y \geqslant 0$.

We begin with the following collection of equivalent equations:

$$
\begin{align*}
& x^{4}+3 x^{3}+3 x^{2}+x+1=y^{2} \\
& 36 x^{4}+108 x^{3}+108 x^{2}+36 x+36=36 y^{2} \\
& \left(6 x^{2}+9 x+2\right)^{2}+3 x^{2}+32=(6 y)^{2}  \tag{1}\\
& \left(6 x^{2}+9 x+3\right)^{2}-9(x+3)(x-1)=(6 y)^{2} \tag{2}
\end{align*}
$$

If $x>1,6 x^{2}+9 x+2<6 y$ [by (1)] and $6 y<6 x^{2}+9 x+3$ [by (2)]. Hence, there are no solutions when $x>1$. If $x<-3,6 x^{2}+9 x+2<6 y$ [by (1)] and $6 y<6 x^{2}+9 x+3$ [by (2)]. Hence, there are no solutions when $x<-3$. The problem is now easily completed.

Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman, L. Cseh, L. A. G. Dresel, Walther Janous, H. Klauser, J. M. Metzger, J. Suck, M. Wachtel, and the proposer.

# ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS 

Edited by<br>RAYMOND E. WHITNEY

Please send all communications concerning ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS to RAYMOND E. WHITNEY, MATHEMATICS DEPARTMENT, LOCK HAVEN UNIVERSITY, LOCK HAVEN, PA 17745. This department especially welcomes problems believed to be new or extending old results. Proposers should submit solutions or other information that will assist the editor. To facilitate their consideration, all solutions should be submitted on separate signed sheets within two months after publication of the problems.

PROBLEMS PROPOSED IN THIS ISSUE
H-392 Proposed by Piero Filipponi, Rome, Italy
It is known [1], [2], [3], [4] that every positive integer $n$ can be represented uniquely as a finite sum of $F$-addends (distinct nonconsecutive Fibonacci numbers). Denoting by $f(n)$ the number of $F$-addends the sum of which represents the integer $n$ and denoting by $[x]$ the greatest integer not exceeding $x$, prove that:
(i) $f\left(\left[F_{k} / 2\right]\right)=[k / 3],(k=3,4, \ldots)$;

$$
f\left(\left[F_{k} / 3\right]\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
{[k / 4]+1, \text { for }[k / 4]=1(\bmod 2) \text { and } k=3(\bmod 4)}  \tag{ii}\\
{[k / 4], \text { otherwise } .}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Find (if any) a closed expression for $f\left(F_{k} / p\right)$ with $p$ a prime and $k$ such that $F_{k} \equiv 0(\bmod p)$.

## References

1. J. L. Brown, Jr. "Zeckendorf's Theorem and Some Applications." The Fibonacei Quarterly 2, no. 4 (1964):163-168.
2. J. L. Brown, Jr. "A New Characterization of the Fibonacci Numbers." The Fibonacci Quarterly 3, no. 1 (1965):1-8.
3. D. E. Daykin. "Representation of Natural Numbers as Sums of Generalized Fibonacci Numbers." J. London Math. Soc. 35 (1960):143-160.
4. D. A. Klarner. "Partitions of $N$ into Distinct Fibonacci Numbers." The Fibonacci Quarterly 6, no. 4 (1968):235-244.

H-393 Proposed by M. Wachtel, Zürich, Switzerland
Consider the triangle below:

| $A_{-n}$ |  | . . |  | $A_{-4}$ | $A_{-3}$ | $A_{-2}$ | $A_{-1}$ | $\left\lvert\, \begin{gathered} A_{0} \\ =m^{2} \end{gathered}\right.$ | $A_{1}$ | $A_{2}$ | $A_{3}$ | $A_{4}$ |  |  | $A_{n}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  | -1 | 1 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |  | -1 | 5 | 9 | 11 |  |  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  |  | 1 | 11 | 19 | 25 | 29 | 31 |  |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  |  | 5 | 19 | 31 | 41 | 49 | 55 | 59 | 61 |  |  |  |  |
|  |  |  | 11 | 29 | 45 | 59 | 71 | 81 | 89 | 95 | 99 | 101 |  |  |  |
|  |  | 19 | 41 | 61 | 79 | 95 | 109 | 121 | 131 | 139 | 145 | 149 | 151 |  |  |
|  | 29 | 55 | 79 | 101 | 121 | 139 | 155 | 169 | 181 | 191 | 199 | 205 | 209 | 211 |  |
| 41 | 71 | 99 | 125 | 149 | 171 | 191 | 209 | 225 | 239 | 251 | 261 | 269 | 275 | 279 | 281 |

This triangle shows two types of sequences:
a) with primes, or with composite terms with no divisors congruent to 3 or 7 modulo 10 ;
b) as described in a), and, in addition, terms with divisors congruent to (3 or 7 modulo 10$)^{2 k}$.

In the above triangle, let:
$A_{0, m}=m^{2}$ ( $m$ odd)
$A_{-n, m}=$ the terms on the left of $A_{0, m}$
$A_{n, m}=$ the terms on the right of $A_{0, m}$

1. Establish general formulas for the sequences of every row, every column, and every diagonal.
2. Establish formulas:
a) for the sequences showing terms that either are primes, or else composite integers with no divisors congruent to 3 or 7 modulo 10 ;
b) for the sequences with terms as described in a) and also with composite terms showing periodically also divisors congruent to (3 or 7 modulo 10$)^{2 k}$.

Remarks: Apart from the formulas
$C-N^{2}+r N$
for the finite sequences, and

$$
C+m N^{2}+r N
$$

for the infinite sequences, there exist other construction rules.
Some examples of relationships which can easily be established are:

| Column $A_{-2}$ Down | Diag. $A_{2}$ Down Left | Columns $A_{-2}$ and $A_{2}$ Down |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $-1=-1 \cdot 2+1$ | $31=-2 \cdot 9+7$ | Every term plus 5=(m₹ $\left.{ }^{\text {a }}\right)^{2}$ |
| $11=1 \cdot 2+3$ | $55=-1 \cdot 9+8$ | Columns $A_{4}$ and $A_{4}$ Dow |
| $31=3 \cdot 2+5$ | $81=0 \cdot 9+9$ | Columns $A_{4}$ and $A_{4}$ Down |
| $59=5 \cdot 2+7$ | $\begin{aligned} & 109=1 \cdot 9+10 \\ & : \end{aligned}$ | Every term plus $5 \cdot 2^{2}=(m \mp 2)^{2}$ |

According to what is stated in 2 above, the following rule holds true:
$A_{n, m}+5\left(a^{2}+a\right)+1=b^{2}+b$, with infinitely many solutions whereby $\alpha$ and $b$ are $F / L$ numbers.
Example: $A_{2,11}$ and $A_{-2,13}=139$

II. $\quad F_{6+6 n}+\frac{L_{-1+6 n}-1}{2}$
$10 F_{3+6 n}-\frac{L_{-1+6 n}+1}{2}$
III. $\quad 5 F_{4+6 n}-\frac{F_{1+6 n}+1}{2}$
$5 L_{4+6 n}-\frac{L_{1+6 n}+1}{2}$
IV. $\quad F_{8+5 n}+\frac{L_{1+6 n}-1}{2}$
$10 F_{5+6 n}-\frac{L_{1+6 n}+1}{2}$

Special Properties: All sequences emerging out of this triangle show the following property:
$A_{k} \cdot A_{k+d}+B$ yield either a square or, alternately, a product
of two consecutive integers. For brevity, example and formula
are omitted.

Then there are combinations of different sequences, but it would take too much space to pursue the many things involved in this triangle.

## SOLUTIONS

## $A B$ Surd

H-367 Proposed by M. Wachtel, Zürich, Switzerland (Vol. 22, no. 1, February 1984)

Problem $A$

Prove the identity:

$$
\sqrt{\left(L_{2 n}-L_{n-2}^{2}\right) \cdot\left(L_{2 n+4}-L_{n}^{2}\right)+30}=5 F_{2 n}-3(-1)^{n}
$$

## Problem B

Prove the identities:
378
[Nov.

$$
\left.\begin{array}{l}
\sqrt{\left(F_{n+1}^{2}-F_{2 n+3}\right) \cdot\left(F_{n+3}^{2}-F_{2 n+7}\right)} \\
\sqrt{\left(F_{n+3}^{2}-F_{2 n+5}\right) \cdot\left(F_{n+5}^{2}-F_{2 n+9}\right)} \\
\sqrt{\left(F_{n+4}^{2}-F_{2 n+6}\right) \cdot\left(F_{n+6}^{2}-F_{2 n+10}\right)}
\end{array}\right\}=F_{n+2} F_{n+4} \quad \text { or } \quad F_{n+3}^{2}+(-1)^{n}
$$

Solution by the proposer.

1. These are particular instances of the more general identities:
A) $\sqrt{\left(L_{2 n+m}-L_{n-2+m}^{2}\right) \cdot\left(L_{2 n+4+m}-L_{n+m}^{2}\right)+5\left[L_{4-m}-(-1)^{m}\right]}, A_{A^{\prime}}^{\prime}$

$$
=L_{2 n+2+m}-L_{n-2+m} L_{n+m}
$$

B) $\sqrt{\left(F_{2 n+m}-F_{n-2+m}^{2}\right) \cdot\left(F_{2 n+4+m}-F_{n+m}^{2}\right)-} \overbrace{(-1)^{m}\left(F_{m-4}-1\right)}$

$$
=F_{2 n+2+m}-F_{n-2+m} F_{n+m}
$$

$n, m=0 \pm 1,2,3, \ldots$.
2. Squaring both sides of 1 and making use of the following identities on the left-hand side, we obtain (with these identities the congruence of both sides is established):
A) I. $\quad L_{2 n+m} L_{2 n+4+m} \equiv L_{2 n+2+m}^{2}+5(-1)^{m}$
(derived from $L_{2 n} L_{2 n+4} \equiv L_{2 n+2}^{2}+5$ )
II. $L_{2 n+m} L_{n+m}^{2} \equiv L_{2 n+2+m} L_{n-2+m} L_{n+m}-5(-1)^{n+m} L_{n+m} F_{n+2}$
[derived from $L_{2 n} L_{n} \equiv L_{2 n+2} L_{n-2}-5(-1)^{n} F_{n+2}$
and $\left.L_{2 n+m} L_{n+m} \equiv L_{2 n+2+m} L_{n-2+m}-5(-1)^{n+m} F_{n+2}\right]$
III. $\quad L_{2 n+4+m} L_{n-2+m}^{2}-5 L_{4-m} \equiv L_{2 n+2+m} L_{n-2+m} L_{n+m}+5(-1)^{n+m} L_{n+m} F_{n+2}$
(similarly derived as I and II)
B) I. $\quad F_{2 n+m} F_{2 n+4+m} \equiv F_{2 n+2+m}^{2}-(-1)^{m}$
II. $\quad F_{2 n+m} F_{n+m}^{2} \equiv F_{2 n+2+m} F_{n-2+m} F_{n+m}+(-1)^{n+m} F_{n+m} F_{n+2}$
III. $\quad F_{2 n+4+m} F_{n-2+m}^{2}+(-1)^{m} F_{m-4} \equiv F_{2 n+2+m} F_{n-2+m} F_{n+m}-(-1)^{n+m} F_{n+m} F_{n+2}$
(similarly derived as A)
3. By establishing the values of

$$
A^{\prime}=5\left[L_{4-m}-(-1)^{m}\right] \quad \text { and } \quad B^{\prime}=-(-1)^{m}\left(F_{m-4}-1\right)
$$

we obtain:

## ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS

| $m$ | $A^{\prime}$ |  | $m$ |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  | 30 |  | $B^{\prime}$ |
| 1 | 25 | 1 | 4 |
| 2 | 10 | 2 | 2 |
| 3 | 10 | 3 | 0 |
| 4 | 5 | 4 | 1 |
| 5 | 0 | 5 | 0 |
| 6 | 10 | 6 | 0 |

4. By application of the the formula 1 and the values 3 , we find:
A) $\quad \underline{m}=0 \quad \sqrt{\left(L_{2 n}-L_{n-2}^{2}\right) \cdot\left(L_{2 n+4}-L_{n}^{2}\right)+30}=L_{2 n+2}-L_{n-2} L$

$$
=5 F_{2 n}-3(-1)^{n}
$$

B) $\quad \underline{m}=3 \sqrt{\left(F_{2 n+3}-F_{n+1}^{2}\right) \cdot\left(F_{2 n+7}-F_{n+3}^{2}\right)}=F_{2 n+5}-F_{n+1} F_{n+3}$
$\left.\begin{array}{ll}\underline{m}=5 & \sqrt{\left(F_{2 n+5}-F_{n+3}^{2}\right) \cdot\left(F_{2 n+9}-F_{n+5}^{2}\right)}=F_{2 n+7}-F_{n+3} F_{n+5} \\ \underline{m=6} & \sqrt{\left(F_{2 n+6}-F_{n+4}^{2}\right) \cdot\left(F_{2 n+10}-F_{n+6}^{2}\right)}=F_{2 n+8}-F_{n+4} F_{n+6}\end{array}\right\} *$
$\star=$ all three versions identical to $-(-1)^{m} F_{n+2} F_{n+4}$,
which had to be shown.
5. Some special properties of the sequences (each sequence shows its own distinct characteristic, depending on $m$ ):
A) $m$ Sequence
$1 \quad 5\left(F_{n-1} F_{n}+F_{n+1}^{2}\right)$, which implies: No integral divisor of any term is congruent to 3 or 7 modulo 10.
2, 6 sequences identical, but with phase difference
$4 \quad$ unique term for any $n:-3(-1)^{n}$
B) 1, 4, $7 \quad F_{r} F_{r+1}+F_{r+2}^{2}$, with phase differences. No integral divivor of any term is congruent to 3 or 7 modulo 10 .
3, 5, 6 sequences identical (see 4B)
... etc.
Also solved by P. Bruckman, L. Dresel, P. Filipponi, L. Kuipers, B. Prielipp, and $H$. Seiffert.

## Sum Formula

H-368 (Corrected) Proposed by Andreas N. Philippou, Patras, Greece (Vol. 22, no. 2, May 1984)

For any fixed integers $k \geqslant 1$ and $r \geqslant 1$, set

$$
f_{n+1, r}^{(k)}=\sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k} \ni>\\ n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+k n_{k}=n}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}+r-1}{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k}, r-1}, n \geqslant 0
$$

## ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS

Show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{n+1, r}^{(k)}=\sum_{\ell=0}^{n} f_{\ell+1,1}^{(k)} f_{n+1-\ell, r-1}^{(k)}, n \geqslant 0, r \geqslant 2 . \tag{*}
\end{equation*}
$$

The problem includes as special cases ( $r=2$ ) the following:
For any fixed integer $k \geqslant 2$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \cdots, n_{k} \\ n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+k n_{k}=n}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}+1}{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k}, 1}=\sum_{\ell=0}^{n} f_{l+1}^{(k)} f_{n+1-\ell}^{(k)}, n \geqslant 0, \tag{A}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $f_{n}^{(k)}$ are the Fibonacci numbers of order $k$ [1], [2].
In particular, for $k=2$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\ell=0}^{[n / 2]}(n+1-\ell)\binom{n-\ell}{\ell}=\sum_{\ell=0}^{n} F_{\ell+1} F_{n+1-\ell}, \quad n \geqslant 0 . \tag{A.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The problem also includes as a special case ( $k=1, r \geqslant 2$ ) the following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{n+r-1}{r-1}=\sum_{\ell=0}^{n}\binom{n-\ell+r-2}{r-2}, n \geqslant 0, r \geqslant 2 . \tag{B}
\end{equation*}
$$

## References

1. A. N. Philippou \& A. A. Muwafi. "Waiting for the $K^{\text {th }}$ Consecutive Success and the Fibonacci Sequence of Order K." The Fibonacci Quarterly 20, no. 1 (1982):28-32.
2. A. N. Philippou. "A Note on the Fibonacci Sequence of Order $k$ and Multinomial Coefficients." The Fibonacci Quarterly 21, no. 2 (1983):82-86.

Solution by the proposer.
For any fixed $x \in(0, \infty)$ and $k$ and $r$ as in the problem, set

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{n+1, r}^{(k)}(x)=\sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k} \ni \ni \\ n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+n_{k}=n}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}+r-1}{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k}, r-1} x^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}, n \geqslant 0} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We shall establish the more general result

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{n+1, r}^{(k)}(x)=\sum_{l=0}^{n} f_{l+1,1}^{(k)}(x) f_{n+1-\ell, r-1}^{(k)}(x), n \geqslant 0, r \geqslant 2 \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

To do so, we consider random variables $X_{1}, \ldots, X_{r}(r \geqslant 2)$ which are independent and identically distributed as $G_{k}(\cdot ; p)(0<p<1)$ (see [3]). Then $X_{1}+\cdots+X_{r}$ is distributed as $N B_{k}(\cdot ; r, p)$ and $X_{2}+\cdots+X_{r}$ is distributed as $N B_{k}(\cdot ; r-1, p)$ [3]. Therefore,
$P\left[X_{1}=\ell+k\right]=p^{\ell+k} \sum_{\substack{\ell_{1}, \ldots, \ell_{k} \ni \ni \\ \ell_{1}+2 \ell_{2}+\cdots+k \ell_{k}=\ell}}\binom{\ell_{1}+\cdots+\ell_{k}}{l_{1}, \ldots, l_{k}}\left(\frac{1-p}{p}\right)^{\ell_{1}+\cdots+\ell_{k}}, \ell \geqslant 0 ;$
$P\left[X_{1}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k_{r}\right]$
$=p^{n+k r} \sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k} \ni \\ n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+k n_{k}=n}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}+r-1}{n_{1}, \cdots, n_{k}, r-1}\left(\frac{1-p}{p}\right)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}, n \geqslant 0 ;$
and
1985]
$P\left[X_{2}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k(r-1)-\ell\right]$
$=p^{n+k(r-1)-\ell} \sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k} \ni}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}+r-2}{n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+k n_{k}=n-\ell}\left(\frac{1-p}{p}\right)^{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}, n \geqslant l$.
Next, for $n \geqslant 0$ and $n \geqslant 2$,
$\left[X_{1}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k r\right]=\bigcup_{\ell=0}^{n}\left\{[X=\ell+k] \cap\left[X_{2}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k(r-1)-\ell\right]\right\}$,
with

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\left\{\left[X_{1}=\ell+k\right] \cap\left[X_{2}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k(r-1)-\ell\right]\right\} \cap\left\{\left[X_{1}=\ell^{\prime}+k\right]\right.  \tag{6}\\
\left.\cap\left[X_{2}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k(r-1)-\ell^{\prime}\right]\right\}=\emptyset \quad\left(0<\ell^{\prime} \leqslant n\right)
\end{array}
$$

and

$$
\left[X_{1}=\ell+k\right]
$$

$\left[X_{2}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k(r-1)-\ell\right]$ are independent events $(0 \leqslant \ell \leqslant n)$. Hence, for $n \geqslant 0$ and $r \geqslant 2$,
$P\left[X_{1}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k r\right]=\sum_{\ell=0}^{n} P\left[X_{1}=\ell+k\right] P\left[X_{2}+\cdots+X_{r}=n+k(r-1)-\ell\right]$.
Set $(1-p) / p=x$, so that $x \in(0, \infty)$. Then relation (7) implies (2), by means of (1) and (3)-(5). Q.E.D.

For $x=1$, relation (2) shows the proposed problem. In order to appreciate its generality, it is instructive to note the special cases (A), (A.1), and (B). (A) follows from (*) for $r=2$, by means of the definition of $f_{n+1, r}^{(k)}$ and the formula of [1] and [2]:

$$
f_{n+1}^{(k)}=\sum_{\substack{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k} \ni \\ n_{1}+2 n_{2}+\cdots+k n_{k}=n}}\binom{n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}}{n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k}}, n \geqslant 0 .
$$

(A.1) follows directly from (A), and (B) is a simple consequence of (*) and the definition of $f_{n+1, r}^{(k)}$.

## References

1. See Reference 1 above (p. 381).
2. See Reference 2 above (p. 381).
3. A. N. Philippou, C. Georghiou, \& G. N. Philippou. "A Generalized Geometric Distribution and Some of Its Properties." Statistics and Probability Letters 1 (1983): 171-175.

Also solved by P. Bruckman.

## $\bullet \diamond \diamond \diamond$

## VOLUME INDEX

ALDER, Henry L. (coauthors A. A. Muwafi \& J. K. Lewis). "Euler's Partition Identity — Are There Any More Like It?" 23(2):113-119.
ANDRICA, Dorin (coauthor S. Buzeteanu). "On the Reduction of a Linear Recurrence of Order r," 23(1):81-84.
ANTONIADIS, Jannis A. "Generalized Fibonacci Numbers and Some Diophantine Equations," 23(3):199-213; 'Fibonacci and Lucas Numbers of the Form $3 z^{2} \pm 1$," 23(4):300-307.
ATANASSOV, Krassimir T. (coauthors L. C. Atanassova \& D.D.Sasselov). "A New Perspective to the Generalization of the Fibonacci Sequence," $23(1): 21-28$
ATANASSOVA, Liliya C. (coauthors K.T. Atanassov \& D.D. Sasselov). "A New Perspective to the Generalization of the Fibonacci Sequence," 23(1):21-28.
BAKER, I.N. (coauthor P.J. Rippon). "A Note on Infinite Exponentials," 23(2):106-112.
BARON, G. (coauthors F. T. Boesch, H. Prodinger, R. F. Tichy, \& J. F. Wang). "The Number of Spanning Trees in the Square of a Cycle," 23(3):258-264.
BARRY, Arthur (coauthor S. Bezuszka, S.J.). "A Fibonacci and Lucas Tannenbaum," 23(4):369-370.
BECK, Walter E. (coauthor R. M. Najar). "Hyperperfect and Unitary Hyperperfect Numbers," 23(3):270-275.
BENNETT, Larry (coauthors G.E. Bergum, A.F. Horadam, \& S.D. Moore). "Jacobsthal Polynomials and a Conjecture Concerning Fibonacci-Like Matrices," 23(3):240-248
BERGUM, G. E. (coauthors L. Bennett, A.F. Horadam, \& S.D. Moore). "Jacobsthal Polynomials and a Conjecture Concerning Fibonacci-Like Matrices," 23(3):240-248.
BEZUSZKA, Stanley, S.J. (coauthor A. Barry). "A Fibonacci and Lucas Tannenbaum," 23(4):369-370.
BICKNELL-JOHNSON, Marjorie. "Generalized Wythoff Numbers from Simultaneous Fibonacci Representations,' 23(4):308-318.
BOESCH, F. T. (coauthors G. Baron, H. Prodinger, R.F. Tichy, \& J.F. Wang). "The Number of Spanning Trees in the Square of a Cycle," 23(3):258-264.
BOSCAROL, Mauro. "A Note on Binomial Coefficients and Chebyshev Polynomials," 23(2):166-168.
BUZETEANU, Serban (coauthor D. Andrica). "On the Reduction of a Linear Recurrence of Order $r$," 23(1):81-84.
CHURCH, C.A., Jr. "Combinatorial Proof for a Sorting Problem Identity," 23(4):366-368.
CLARKE, J.H. (coauthor A.G. Shannon). "Some Generalized Lucas Sequences," 23(2):120-125.
COHEN, G.L. (coauthor R.J. Williams). "Extensions of Some Results Concerning Odd Perfect Numbers," 23(1):70-76
COLBOURN, Charles J. (coauthor E.M. Neufeld). "Lucas Sequences in Subgraph Counts of Series-Parallel and Related Graphs," 23(4):330-337.
DAWSON, R. (coauthors G. Gabor, R. Nowakowski, \& D. Wiens). "Random Fibonacci-Type Sequences," 23(2):169-176.
DeBOUVERE, Karel L. "A Report on the First International Conference on Fibonacci Numbers and Their Applica tions," $23(2): 98$
EPASINGHE, P.W. "Euclid's Algorithm and the Fibonacci Numbers," 23(2):177-179.
FREITAG, Herta T. "A Report on the First International Conference on Fibonacci Numbers and Their Applications," 23(2):98-99.
FRENKLACH, Michael. "Linear Recurrence Relations with Binomial Coefficients," 23(4):359-363.
GABOR, G. (coauthors R. Dawson, R. Nowakowski, \& D. Wiens). "Random Fibonacci-Type Sequences," 23(2):169-176. GEORGIOU, Costas (coauthors A.N. Philippou \& G.N. Philippou). "Fibonacci-Type Polynomials of Order $K$ with Probability Applications," 23(2):100-105.
GOULD, H.W. (coauthor W.E. Greig). "A Lucas Triangle Primality Criterion Dual to that of Mann-Shanks,"23(1):66-69
GREENBAUM, Steven (coauthor K.B. Stolarsky). "A Ratio Associated with $\phi(x)=n$," 23(3):265-269.
GREIG, W.E. (coauthor H.W. Gould). "A Lucas Triangle Primality Criterion Dual to that of Mann-Shanks," 23(1):66-69
HERDA, Hans. "The Series of Prime Square Reciprocals," 23(4):364-365.
HILLMAN, A.P. Ed. Elementary Problems and Solutions, 23(1):85-88; 23(2):181-185; 23(3):277-281; 23(4):371-375.
HOFT, Hartmut (coauthor M. Hoft). "A Fibonacci Sequence of Distributive Lattices," 23(3):232-237
HÖFT, Margret (coauthor H. Hoft). "A Fibonacci Sequence of Distributive Lattices," 23(3):232-237.
HORADAM, A.F. "Zigzag Polynomials," 23(3):214-220; "Gegenbauer Polynomials Revisited," 23(4):294-299, 307.
HORADAM, A.F. (coauthor J.M. Mahon). "Pell and Pell-Lucas Polynomials," 23(1):7-20; "Inverse Trigonometrical Summation Formulas Involving Pell Polynomials," 23(4):319-324.
HORADAM, A.F. (coauthors G.E. Bergum, L. Bennett, \& S.D. Moore). "Jacobsthal Polynomials and a Conjecture Concerning Fibonacci-Like Matrices," 23(3):240-248.
HORAK. P. (coauthor L. Skula). "A Characterization of the Second-Order Strong Divisibility Sequences," 23(2):126-132. HOWARD, F.T. "Integers Related to the Bessel Function $J_{1}(z), "$ 23(3):249-257.
KOHLER, Gunter. "Generating Functions of Fibonacci-LikeSequences and Decimal Expansions of Some Fractions," 23(1):29-35.
KYRIAKOYSSIS, A. "A Congruence for a Class of Exponential Numbers," 23(1):45-48.
LAOHAKOSOL, Vichian (coauthor N. Roenrom). "A Third-Order Analog of a Result of L. Carlitz," 23(3): 194-198.
LAVERTU, Marie-Louis (coauthor C. Levesque). "On Bernstein's Combinatorial Identities," 23(4):347-355.
LAYWINE, Charles (coauthor G.L. Mullen). "Latin Cubes and Hypercubes of Prime Order," 23(2):139-145.
LEVESQUE, Claude. "On $m$-th Order Linear Recurrences," 23(4):290-293.
LEVESQUE, Claude (coauthor M.-L. Lavertu). "On Bernstein's Combinatorial Identities," 23(4):347-355.
LEWIS, Jeffrey K. (coauthors A.A. Muwafi \& H.L. Alder). "Euler's Partition Identity - Are There Any More Like It?" 23(2):113-119.
LONG, Calvin T. "On a Fibonacci Arithmetical Trick," 23(3):221-231.

MAHON, Bro. J.M. (coauthor A.F. Horadam)."Pell and Pell-Lucas Polynomials," 23(1):7-20; "Inverse'Trigonometrical Summation Formulas InvoIving Pell Polynomials," 23(4):319-324.
MAKRI, FrossoS. (coauthor A.N. Philippou). "LongestSuccess Runs and Fibonacci-Type Polynomials," 23(4):338-346. McCLUNG, O.W. "Generators of Unitary Amicable Numbers," 23(2):158-165.
MOHANTY, S.P. (coauthor A.M.S. Ramasamy). "On $P_{r, k}$ Sequences," 23(1):36-44.
MONZINGO, M.G. "On the Distribution of Consecutive Triples of Quadratic Residues and QuadraticNonresidues and Related Topics, 23(2):133-138.
MOORE, S.D. (coauthors G.E. Bergum, L. Bennett, \& A.F. Horadam). "Jacobsthal Polynomials and a Conjecture Concerning Fibonacci-Like Matrices," 23(3):240-248.
MULLEN, Gary L. (coauthor C. Laywine). "Latin Cubes and Hypercubes of Prime Order," 23(2):139-145
MUWAFI, Amin A. (coauthors H.L. Alder \& J.K. Lewis). "Euler's Partition Identity - Are There Any More Like It?" 23(2):113-119.
NAJAR, Rudolph M. (coauthor W.E. Beck). "Hyperperfect and Unitary Hyperperfect Numbers," 23(3):270-275.
NEUFELD, Eric M. (coauthor C.J. Colbourn). "Lucas Sequences in Subgraph Counts of Series-Parallel and Related Graphs," 23(4):330-337.
NOWAKOWSKI, R. (coauthors R. Dawson, G. Gabor, \& D. Wiens). "Random Fibonacci-Type Sequences," 23(2):169-176.
PADILLA, Gloria C., Asst. Ed. Elementary Problems and solutions, 23(1):85-88; 23(2):181-185; 23(3):277-281; 23(4):371375.

PETHE, S. "On Lucas Fundamental Functions and Chebychev Polynomial Sequences," 23(1):57-65.
PHILIPPOU, Andreas N. (coauthors C. Georghiou \& G.N. Philippou). "Fibonacci-Type Polynomials of Order $K$ with Probability Applications," 23(2):100-105.
PHILIPPOU, Andreas N. (coauthor F.S. Makri). "LongestSuccess Runs and Fibonacci-Type Polynomials," 23(4):338346.

PHILIPPOU, George N. (coauthors A.N. Philippou \& C. Georghiou). "Fibonacci-Type Polynomials of Order $K$ with Probability Applications," 23(2):100-105.
POPOV, Blagoj S. "A Note on the Sums of Fibonacci and Lucas Polynomials," 23(3):238-239.
PRODINGER, H. (coauthors G. Baron, F.T. Boesch, R.F. Tichy, \& J.F. Wang). "The Number of Spanning Trees in the Square of a Cycle," 23(3):258-264.
RALSTON, Blake. "Elemental Complete Composite Number Generators," 23(2):149-150.
RAMASAMY, A.M.S. (coauthor S.P. Mohanty). "On $P_{r, k}$ Sequences," 23(1):36-44.
RIPPON. P.J. (coauthor I.N. Baker). "A Note on Infinite Exponentials," 23(2):106-112.
ROENROM, Nit (coauthor V. Laohakosol). "A Third-Order Analog of a Result of L. Carlitz," 23(3):194-198.
ROSE, Nicholas J. "A Note on a Fibonacci Identity," 23(2):151-152.
SASSELOV, Dimitar D. (coauthors K.T. Atanassov \& L.C. Atanassova). "A New Perspective to the Generalization of the Fibonacci Sequence," 23(1):21-28.
SCHMEICHEL, Edward (coauthor K. Zikan). "A Path Counting Problem in Digraphs," 23(1):3-6.
SHRAGE, Georg. "A Two-Dimensional Generalization of Grundy's Game," 23(4):325-329.
SHANNON, A.G. (coauthor J.H. Clarke). "Some Generalized Lucas Sequences," 23(2):120-125.
SKULA, L. (coauthor P. Horak). "A Characterization of the Second-Order Strong Divisibility Sequences," 23(2):126-132.
STAM, A.J. "Regeneration Points in Random Permutations," 23(1): 49-56.
STERNHEIMER, R.M. "A Corollary to Iterated Exponentiation," 23(2):146-148.
STOLARSKY, Kenneth B. (coauthor S. Greenbaum). "A Ratio Associated with $\phi(x)=n$," 23(3):265-269.
TICHY, R.F. (coauthors G. Baron, F.T. Boesch, H. Prodinger, \& J.F. Wang). "The Number of Spanning Trees in the Square of a Cycle," 23(3):258-264.
TOGNETTI, Keith (coauthors T. Van Ravenstein \& G. Winley). "A Property of Convergence to the Golden Mean." 23(2):155-157.
TOVEY, Craig A. "Multiple Occurrences of Binomial Coefficients," 23(4):356-358.
VAN RAVENSTEIN, Tony (coauthors G. Winley \& K. Tognetti). "A Property of Convergence to the Golden Mean," 23(2):155-157.
WALKER, Marshall."Golden Cuboid Sequences," 23(2):153-154.
WALL, Charles R. "On Triangular Fibonacci Numbers," 23(1):77-79; "Guessing Exact Solutions," 23(1):80.
WALL, Charles R., Asst. Ed. Elementary Problems and Solutions, 23(1):85-88; 23(2):181-185; 23(3):277-281; 23(4):371375.

WANG, J.F. (coauthors G. Baron, F.T. Boesch, H. Prodinger, \& R.F. Tichy). "The Number of Spanning Trees in the Square of a Cycle," 23(3):258-264.
WHITNEY, Raymond E., Ed. Advanced Problems and Solutions, 23(1):89-96; 23(2):186-192; 23(3):282-288; 23(4):376382.

WIENS, D. (coauthors R. Dawson, G. Gabor, \& R. Nowakowski). "Random Fibonacci-Type Sequences," 23(2):169-176.
WILLIAMS, R.J. (coauthor G.L. Cohen). "Extensions of Some Results Concerning Odd Perfect Numbers," 23(1):70-76.;
WINLEY, Graham (coauthors T. Van Ravenstein \& K. Tognetti). "A Property of Convergence to the Golden Mean," 23(2):155-157.
ZIKAN, Karel (coauthor E. Schmeichel). "A Path Counting Problem in Digraphs," 23(1):3-6.

## SUSTAINING MEMBERS

| *A.L. Alder | H. Diehl | S.D. Moore, Jr. |
| :--- | :--- | :--- |
| S. Ando | J.L. Ercolano | K. Nagasaka |
| *J. Arkin | D.R. Farmer | F.J. Ossiander |
| B.I. Arthur, Jr. | F.F. Frey, Jr. | S. Rabinowitz |
| L. Bankoff | C.L. Gardner | E.M. Restrepo |
| C.A. Barefoot | A.A. Gioia | E.D. Robinson |
| Frank Bell | R.M. Giuli | S.E. Schloth |
| M. Berg | I.J. Good | J.A. Schumaker |
| J.G. Bergart | H.W. Gould | H.G. Simms |
| G. Bergum | W.E. Greig | J. Sjoberg |
| G. Berzsenyi | H.E. Heatherly | L. Somer |
| *M. Bicknell-Johnson | A.P. Hillman | M.N.S. Swamy |
| C. Bridger | *A.F. Horadam | L. Taylor |
| Br. A. Brousseau | F.T. Howard | *D. Thoro |
| J.L. Brown, Jr. | R.J. Howell | R. Vogel |
| P.S. Bruckman | R.P. Kelisky | C.C. Volpe |
| P.F. Byrd | C.H. Kimberling | M. Waddill |
| G.D. Chakerian | J. Lahr | *L.A. Walker |
| J.W. Creely | *C.T. Long | J.E. Walton |
| P.A. DeCaux | FJ. Maxwell | G. Weekly |
| M.J. DeLeon | L. Miller | R.E. Whitney |
| J. Desmond | M.G. Monzingo | B.E. Williams |
| *Charter Members |  |  |

## INSTITUTIONAL MEMBERS

THE BAKER STORE EQUIPMENT COMPANY
Cleveland, Ohio
CALIFORNIA STATE UNIVERSITY, SACRAMENTO
Sacramento, California
GENERAL BOOK BINDING COMPANY
Chesterland, Ohio
PRINCETON UNIVERSITY
Princeton, New Jersey
SAN JOSE STATE UNIVERSITY
San Jose, California
SCIENTIFIC ENGINEERING
INSTRUMENTS, INC.
Sparks, Nevada

TRI STATE UNIVERSITY Angola, Indiana
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, SANTA CRUZ Santa Cruz, California
UNIVERSITY OF GEORGIA Athens, Georgia

UNIVERSITY OF REDLANDS
Redlands, California
UNIVERSITY OF SANTA CLARA
Santa Clara, California
UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
Toronto, Canada
WASHINGTON STATE UNIVERSITY
Pullman, Washington

## BOOKS AVAILABLE THROUGH THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION

Introduction to Fibonacci Discovery by Brother Alfred Brousseau. Fibonacci Association (FA), 1965.
Fibonacci and Lucas Numbers by Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. FA, 1972.
A Primer for the Fibonacci Numbers. Edited by Majorie Bicknell and Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. FA, 1972.

Fibonacci’s Problem Book. Edited by Majorie Bicknell and Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. FA, 1974.

The Theory of Simply Periodic Numerical Functions by Edouard Lucas. Translated from the French by Sidney Kravitz. Edited by Douglas Lind. FA, 1969.

Linear Recursion and Fibonacci Sequences by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1971.

Fibonacci and Related Number Theoretic Tables. Edited by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1972.

Number Theory Tables. Edited by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1973.
Recurring Sequences by Dov Jarden. Third and enlarged edition. Riveon Lematematika, Israel, 1973.
Tables of Fibonacci Entry Points, Part One. Edited and annotated by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1965.
Tables of Fibonacci Entry Points, Part Two. Edited and annotated by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1965.

A Collection of Manuscripts Related to the Fibonacci Sequence - 18th Anniversary Volume. Edited by Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. and Marjorie BicknellJohnson. FA, 1980.

Please write to the Fibonacci Association, University of Santa Clara, CA 95053, U.S.A., for current prices.


[^0]:    *Professor L. Bernstein died on March 12, 1984, of a cerebral hemorrhage.

